

2nd Timothy-1

Lesson #1 Series # 469 2Tim 1:1

- I. The dying words of famous people come down to us through history and rarely are of any great significance.
 - A. There are occasions when this is not true as with Stonewall Jackson a Super Grace believer who had some great words to say at his death.
 - B. The apostle Paul who had not had good health all his life was healthy at the time of his death and it was 1 stroke of the lichten axe which took his head and his life.
 1. Up to this moment he was lucid and 2 Timothy is basically the dying words of one of the greatest people who ever lived.
 - C. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ being unique is not generally considered when we think of what “people” have done since he was unique in every way.
 1. The dying words of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, are the greatest words ever uttered in death in Human History.
 2. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ said (g) Tetelestai = “FINISHED” he was describing the fact that salvation was completed and nothing could ever be added to it and we are here today as believers having followed the injunction of the scripture and “believed” in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for Eternal Life Salvation.
 3. At his death he passed on the colors to the Royal Family of God when he mentioned Doctrine as the most important thing in life.
 - D. Aside from Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Paul must rank first in Human History, for his breadth of thought, phenomenal life experience, the declaration of the canon of scripture there being no higher content of Bible Doctrine and no greater content in the bible than the Pauline epistles.
 1. This last one is probably the most significant of all having MORE to say and illustrate of Grace than any other.
 2. Paul was also one of the most traveled people of all time and he did all of this without any type of modern travel.
 3. Paul had gone from one end of the roman empire to the other, from Syria in the east to Spain on the Atlantic ocean an incredible feat especially for that time.
 4. The greatest travel of Paul most likely occurred between 1st and 2nd Timothy as there is a 2 year lapse between these.
 - E. Principles:
 1. The first roman imprisonment of Paul is recorded in Acts 28:16 where Paul was placed under house arrest for 2 years waiting for his first trial before Nero. Phil 2:23-24, Philemon 22.
 2. During this time Paul wrote the 4 prison epistles Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Philemon around AD62.
 3. Paul was released for lack of residence against him and he entered into his final stage of his life of freedom and there is very little scripture upon which we can examine this period for his 4th missionary journey.
 4. Paul was acquitted and released in about AD63 and he left Rome almost immediately and went EAST to Asia Minor.
 5. He traveled on the famous Ignation Highway overland to Macedonia Phil 2:24 this being one of the greatest highways ever to exist for its durability and fame.
 6. He went to Macedonia and Philippi and Ephesus and the Lycus Valley for the first time ever and to Colossi, Laodocia and Herpolis.
 7. In the Lycus Valley Paul had the privilege of stopping Gnosticism.
 8. In AD64 he then traveled West to Spain as he should have many years before Rom 15:24+28, as he should have many years before but for his emotional reversionism failure.
 9. He made the trip by sea across the Med from Ephesus to Marseilles and bypassing Rome in AD64 since it had in part been BURNED down by Nero he being a city planner among

- other things and to get rid of the slums of Rome he simply burned them out in order to erect his new concepts of Rome.
10. In the burning of the city he had to have someone to blame since the people did not like being burned out of their homes and the Christians made great scapegoats.
 11. From Marseilles Paul went on to Gades which is our Cadiz which is almost on the Atlantic on the Straits of Hercules or Gibraltar.
 12. From Spain Paul went back across the Med to Ephesus and this is when he left Timothy there to take command and be the Pastor Teacher there.
 13. The Ephesian church was the key church of the ancient world at this time and by leaving Timothy there Paul assumed that he was leaving one of his finest pastors there in command.
 14. This however did not turn out that way and the Ephesian church was out of control mostly because Timothy did not have the ability to take charge.
 - i. In History it is very interesting to see how great men delegate authority
 - a. Napoleon Selected some very courageous men to become his marshals but most were not very bright ones with Davue and Massina being exceptions but generally his choices caused him a great deal of trouble.
 15. This is what Paul did with Timothy who had always been promising as a student in his seminary and had demonstrated greater perspicacity than anyone else although he did not have the toughness of Titus the greatest troubleshooter for Paul.
 16. At the time of selection of someone for this position in Ephesus Paul made a Mistake but it would be rectified by Timothy's reversion recovery.
 17. Timothy would become one of the greatest believers of his time AFTER the death of Paul but up to that time he was the wimp and failure of all time.
 18. This key church was out of hand totally because Timothy being in command had NO command, leadership, moral courage abilities and no concept of teaching Bible Doctrine and establishing his authority on that basis.
 19. Instead Timothy gave up generally and entered into reversionism and allowed the church to fall into ruin and many women were in charge of areas in the church and certain bullying men were pushing their weight around and the result was disaster in this church.
 20. The reversionistic believers had all but ruined this great strategic center of Christianity in the ancient world.
 21. By leaving Timothy in charge Paul assumed that everything would be alright but it was in fact NOT at all alright as we saw in 1st Timothy.
 22. Leaving Timothy in charge and not realizing what would happen went on to Macedonia and wrote 2 more epistles 1st Timothy AD66, Titus in Crete AD67.
 23. Other Trouble spots now appeared which called Paul to leave Trophemus at Miletus 36 miles south of Ephesus and Errastus who had once been a famous official in Corinth at Corinth
 24. Paul then began to advance into the Balkan part of the world to a country called in the ancient world Aperus similar to Dalmatia.
 25. He found a spot needing Evangelism and building up of a church and he wintered in Necapolis in AD67-8.
 26. At the close of that winter Paul was Seized and Arrested in Necapolis and taken to Rome for his 2nd imprisonment.
 27. This last epistle was written during his 2nd imprisonment and were his last written words.
 28. Paul was condemned to death before his trial 2Tim 2:9 so that it was his forgoing conclusion that he would not be released this time but would die.
 29. So when he wrote this epistle he knows he is going to die and that he will be executed and therefore this epistle is the words of a dying man which are very lucid and beautiful and one of the most profitable of all of them
 30. At this time Paul is Almost Alone and his only companion is Luke his Physician, Friend, Historian and a wonderful believer.

31. All of Paul's friends and companions having been needed in various area and having been trained by Paul and they are not paying off this training.
 32. Timothy has gone to Ephesus 1Tim 1:3, Titus has gone to Crete Tit 1:4-5, Trophemus has been left a Miletus 2Tim 4:20, Erastus has been sent to Corinth 2Tim 4:20, Cressins has gone to Galatia 2Tim 4:10, Titus has gone to Dalmatia 2Tim 4:10, Ticcus has gone to Ephesus to Replace Timothy so he can go quickly to Rome 2Tim 4;12, This leave Paul practically ALONE.
 33. Paul is never really alone having GREAT inner resources of Bible Doctrine and what a person truly is, is what he is when isolated and alone and Paul demonstrates the great inner resources of Bible Doctrine and explains what it is like to be alone and something of his fantastic greatness.
 34. When you take his natural greatness and fill it with Bible Doctrine you have one of the greatest and most unique people who have ever lived.
 35. Paul's 2nd Roman Trial is found in 2Tim 4:6-8, 14-17.
 36. During his 2nd imprisonment is when Paul wrote to Timothy for the last time in AD68, 2 years after the first writing to Timothy.
 37. During this time some fantastic things happened and shortly after writing this epistle Paul was executed.
 38. In Rome NON citizens when executed were crucified and Citizens were decapitated except senators who were allowed 24 hours to commit suicide by slitting the wrists in a tub of hot water.
 39. Shortly after writing 2nd Timothy Paul was sentenced by Nero and taken out to Via Ostia on the way to the seaport and the lichter had him kneel and decapitated him.
 40. He was said to be buried in the subterranean caverns of Rome
 41. Peter was not in Rome and did not die in Rome and not even his FOOT went to Rome and he died where Paul had just come from.
- F. Paul therefore is writing this epistle from Rome being imprisoned there in the spring of Ad68 and the occasion for this is the Dying words of Paul to Timothy written JUST before his death and it is his Auld Lang Zine and the subject of this first chapter is "NOT BEING ASHAMED".
1. Paul was not ashamed in the manner in which he was to die nor his life nor anything else and this does not mean he did not ever sin for he was the worst of all sinners before his salvation
 2. This did not mean he did not FAIL in reversionism since he had failed and did not mean he did not have things of which he could be ashamed nor that he did not have skeletons in his closet it IMPLIES that those things are meaningless to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace during Dying Grace Blessings.
- G. The Areas of Unashamedness:
1. v3-7 he was not ashamed of Timothy an incredible reversal because Timothy has recovered from reversionism in the 2 years since he had his shadow sweated into the wall by Paul in 1st Timothy.
 - i. Wimpy Timothy is going to become Super Grace Timothy.
 - ii. Timothy the great failure the weak sister the pushover for anyone the one who could not take charge of a paper bag full of hot air would suddenly take charge and reach his great potential Paul say in his training.
 2. Obviously when talking about NOT being ashamed and Auld Lang Zine, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ must inevitably come to mind and Paul expresses this in v8-11
 3. Finally we see also that Paul is NOT at all ashamed of Bible Doctrine and sees it as the great deposit which brings compound interest to the life of the believer. V12-18.
- H. V1-2 there is a preface to the epistle which brings out the of all the members of the Royal Family of God there is no greater nobility that that of Paul.
1. AT this time in roman history Latin and Koine Greek were EXACT Equivalentents and here Paul == (gr) Paulos, (lat) Paulus.
 2. This is a family name as part of the Roman Name

3. The roman name for all roman citizens was broken down into 3 parts
 - i. Prinomen, Nomen, Cognomen
 - ii. Prinomen was the name given at birth of shortly thereafter a “baptismal name”.
 - a. This distinguishes a person from others in the same family.
 - iii. Nomen was a designation of the Tribe from which the individual has descended in Rome.
 - iv. Cognomen is the family name.
 - v. Surname is what famous Romans had for Achievement or some great characteristic.
 - vi. These names of Romans were important and was basically telling a story about the person.
 - vii. The Romans were an amalgamation of at least 5 different groups and when this had occurred they retained a great pride in the original families of the republic.
4. Paul is a roman citizen and Paul is a SURNAME not his name at all and is what he took as a surname as an honor AFTER HIS SALVATION.
 - i. Paulus means LITTLE and added to his roman name because of his Grace Orientation 1Cor 15:10, 1Tim 1:12-16
 - ii. His real name is Saul Benjamin Tarsus.
 - iii. Tarsus was the city from which he came he not being descended from one of the original roman families and he was a Jew but someone in his family had become a roman citizen usually this was because of some honorable or great thing he did in service to the empire and not being from one of the famous old families the city of birth was used instead as the Cognomen.
 - iv. Saul was his given name
 - v. His Tribe was Benjamin being a Jew
 - vi. Thus his name was Saul Benjamin Tarsus Paulus and he is the Human Author of this epistle and one of the greatest believers of all time.
5. Lucius Domitius Ananias and Saul Benjamin Tarsus met 2 times in the ancient world and they were both great men at that time.
 - i. Surname in Rome was also designated as a special honor and Paul considered it an honor to be considered Little as a designation of his Grace Orientation.
 - ii. Nero was the surname of Lucius Domitius Ananias and was his fantasy and flight from reality when he thought of himself in terms of the Sabine language as Rome’s GREAT HERO.
 - iii. Paul being oriented to GRACE did not think in terms of being a Hero but in terms of being Grace Orientated.
 - iv. Therefore the 2 most famous people of that day were contemporaries one we know as Nero the other we know as Paul.
 - v. Nero did not live beyond the apostle Paul more than 1 year and he would die very shortly after the trial of Paul.
 - vi. It is interesting that these 2 famous men should 2 times meet face to face, one being the greatest man ever to live the other the greatest FARCE ever to live.
 - vii. Both were dynamic people but the dynamics of one never effected the other and they met, clashed and parted, one went to heaven the other to hell.
 - viii. Both departed this life within 6 months of each other.
 - ix. Nero was an egomaniac and Paul was totally under Grace Orientation.
 - x. Paul explains why he took the surname Paulus 1Cor 15:10, Acts 13:9, 1Tim 1:12-16
 - xi. Both Nero and Paul took their surname and switched it to a cognomen (??? prinomen???) and both were oriented to life in opposite ways.
 - xii. Nero was an egomaniac and Paul was the most Grace Orientated person in history.
6. We must always be thankful we are under the Grace of God.
 - i. The illusions of pride never ever find any worthwhile thing in capacity for life.

- ii. Both of these surnames became cognomens which are marked down in history as the contrast of the Pride of Reversionism in contrast to the Grace of God.

I. The title of Paul is "apostle" of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

1. Apostle is the highest ranking spiritual gift the Royal Family of God has ever known and was originally used in classical Greek for Athenian admirals designated by the ruling counsel to command the fleet during any sweep it was to make.
2. It carried the connotation of MAXIMUM authority.
3. The Spiritual Gift includes the authority of Absolute Dictatorship over all members of the Royal Family of God and all Christians in any local at any time.
4. Once the canon was completed in Ad96 when John wrote Revelation this gift ceased to exist.
5. When John Died on Patmos or shortly thereafter in Ephesus that was the last of the apostles.
6. No one has had this level of authority since then and it is in fact not needed since the canon has been completed.
7. This gift carries maximum authority to communicate Bible Doctrine and provide policy and administration for pre-canon local churches throughout the ancient world and in fact to establish these local churches and to find those who had the gift of Pastor Teacher and train them and place them.
8. This means the apostle having the authority to establish churches, appoint pastors, regulate doctrine, judge Dissension, excommunicate reversionists, train future pastors has Assigned Timothy to Ephesus and writes him for the last time in Ad68.

J. Apostleship:

1. This carries the highest authority in the Spiritual Life.
2. The time of appointment was God the Holy Spirit providing it at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and since many apostles came over from the prior dispensation and were saved in the age of Israel instead of the Church Age they received this Spiritual gift directly from Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Eph 4:8
3. The gift only lasted to 96 AD and there must be a distinction between the Apostles to Israel and the Apostles to the Church.
4. Matt 10 these are the apostles to Israel having nothing to do with the Church Age.
5. The election of Matthias Acts 1 is a farce and he is not the 12th to replace Judas Paul is that one.
6. Apostles had to be qualified as well by having seen the resurrected Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
7. Paul say the resurrected Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the Damascus Road
8. The Apostles had to Eye Witnesses to the Resurrection and qualified by the spiritual gift and identified as apostles by something later recorded in the scripture.
9. The apostles had to also be backed up with other spiritual gifts such as healing, tongues, miracles, some gift which indicated they carried this authority.
10. There were 12 apostles to the church:
 - i. The 11 with Judas Iscariot begin an unbeliever was excluded and the election of Matthias was a farce
 - ii. Paul was the 12th apostle 1Cor 15:7-10
11. Apostles Delegated authority and why Barnabas was sometimes called an apostle but was not simply having delegated authority as did John Mark, James the Lord's brother, Apollos delegated to Corinth, Silas and Timothy, Titus All having delegated authority from apostles NOT being Apostles.

II. Paul starts this book by USING HIS RANK.

A. Paul an apostle of Christ Jesus

1. Christos == Appointed or anointed one referring to Christ as Messiah, this is reference to the Jewish Royalty of Jesus.
2. Iesous == Savior equivalent to Joshua and a reference to the Cross and the battlefield royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

- B. This shows Paul understands thoroughly the change in dispensation
 - 1. The Jewish age coming to a screeching halt with the crucifixion, resurrection and Ascension of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had been rejected by Israel at the cross as their king but he was appointed as new royalty by his session at the right hand of God the Father.
 - ii. This brought the Age of Israel to a halt in order to call out the Royal Family of God in the Church Age.
 - iii. Paul recognizes that he is standing on the edge of a new dispensation which demands great explanation in every possible way.
- C. No man ever had greater capacity for life, happiness, blessing and death and no man ever had such a unique Super Grace blessing package and no one will ever have a greater package of surpassing grace and NO MAN ever had a quieter or more pleasant DEATH.
 - 1. Paul was in the Plan of God so are each of us in the Royal Family of God.
 - i. We have an opportunity in our time to do with Paul actually did that being the EXPLOITATION of GRACE to the Maximum
 - ii. This means maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. We are all part of the Plan of God as part of the Royal Family of God.
 - 1. Our life on this earth is one of benefit through promise
 - i. We are under the promise of God forever and we have a pledge and promise from God because of the work of Christ on the cross and because we have responded to that work by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - ii. We are under a pledge of Eternal Life and a guarantee that from Eternity Past God has provided for us everything we would need in this temporal life from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond into eternity starting with saving grace moving along in life logistical grace gaining Super Grace blessings and completing with surpassing grace.
 - iii. This was all provided in Eternity Past and awaits our spiritual growth in time
 - iv. God has pledged this to each of us for reaching Super Grace Status Quo and we have no concept of the greatness of grace to be exploited in our life.
- E. We have the concept of position in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - 1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is seated at the right hand of God the Father and is Battlefield royalty and EACH of us as Church Age believers are placed into union with him by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
 - i. We share his life which is Eternal Life, his destiny, his election, his priesthood, royalty, and we are in union with him forever and nothing can ever separate us from this union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

III. Profile of Timothy

- A. Timothy is the son of an unbeliever Greek and a believer Jew, Acts 16:1-3
 - 1. His father was a Greek his mother a Jew and a believer.
- B. He was brought up by his grandmother Lois and Mother Unis 2Tim 1:5 both were Super Grace believers representing 2 generations of Super Grace believers consequently Timothy had a fantastic spiritual heritage 2 Tim 3:15
- C. Timothy was circumcised by Paul under unusual circumstances Acts 16:3, which demanded a grace ministry at a spot where such grace would not have gone without this act.
- D. He was ordained to the ministry 1Tim 4:14, 4:5, He had the gift of Pastor Teacher and training and was ordained.
- E. He went to Philippi with Paul and Luke and remained to supervise the Philippian church made up of wonderful people and were Paul perhaps developed a misimpression and Timothy did a great job in Philippi and those believers there responded very well to his teaching and he was an advancing believer having not reached Super Grace.
- F. He was left behind with Silas at Bereah Acts 17:14 and since these people were under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine again he had a great ministry.

- G. Having Joined Paul at Athens he then went to Thessalonica 1Thes 3;2
 - H. From there he went to Corinth and failed having for the first time coming up against believers with Negative Volition and in reversionism 1Cor 16:10 was a total failure his being too soft and weak to handle these people.
 - 1. This failure foreshadows his failure in Ephesus where he again was not tough enough with bullies and lost control of the church and being disillusioned with people he entered his own reversionism in Ephesus.
 - I. He shared Paul's first roman imprisonment Phil 1;1, 2;19, Col 1:1, Phil 1
 - J. After he started out with Paul on his 4th missionary journey and was left behind in Ephesus and failed 1Tim.
- IV. As his former student Paul supervised Timothy and this authority will always exist and Paul will always out rank Timothy as long as he lives and as long as Paul lives he would have authority over him.
- A. Grace is the Plan of God in principle:
 - 1. There is in the Grace Plan of God NO Place for human works or deeds, ability, ingenuity, function of any kind nor Human Good nor evil.
 - B. Grace in action.
 - C. Grace, Mercy and Prosperity is the normal function of Status Quo of the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. This believer starts with grace which is administered to him as he takes in Bible Doctrine under grace in action and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he reaches prosperity in time in Super Grace.
 - 2. Grace begins at the cross were we receive 40 assets from God including the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for our spiritual life in time and eternity.
 - 3. Being still alive after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God living grace or Logistical Grace is provided to give us ALL that is needed for us to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 4. As a result of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from the daily function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception he brings us to Status Quo Super Grace with 5 categories of blessings.
 - i. Spiritual Blessings
 - ii. Temporal Blessings
 - iii. Association Blessings
 - iv. Historical Blessings
 - v. Dying Blessing reserved for the death of the believer.
 - 5. The Super Grace believer carries those in his periphery and his generation in history
 - D. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is 3 categories of royalty and all 3 have to do with functions in life:
 - 1. He is divine royalty as the son of God
 - 2. He is Jewish royalty at birth as the Son of David
 - 3. He is Battlefield Royalty at his resurrection, ascension and Session with his title being King of Kings and Lord of Lords with the believers in the Church Age being his royal family.
 - 4. These are all related to the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and they relate various events and functions in the 2nd advent.
 - 5. These also relate to certain functions and activities in the first advent as well.
 - E. There is no reference to God the Holy Spirit here in this salutation it being compatible with the Church Age ministry of God the Holy Spirit which is to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. John 7:39, 16:14, 1Cor 6:19-20
 - 1. God the Holy Spirit is not here to glorify self and where the tongues movement is so far off base.
 - 2. In glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ God the Holy Spirit remains in the background providing the power and ability for the Royal Family of God to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. 2Cor 3:3, Eph 3:16-17, Phil 1:20-21
 - 3. God the Holy Spirit must remain in the background for this function thus not mentioned in this salutation.

2Tim 1:1

v1: Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the purpose, design and will of The God the Father from Eternity Past, according to the promise of the Eternal Life which is in Union with Christ Jesus,

2Tim 1:2

v2: To the advantage of Timothy (and us), beloved theological student under discipline to the instructor (Paul); Grace, Mercy or Grace in Action, and resultant Super Grace Prosperity from God even the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

Lesson #2 Series # 469 2Tim 1:3

- I. The wounding of Military Men in History
 - A. Nathan Bedford Forrest – Had surgery for a bullet next to his spine and was up and on his horse again in a few weeks.
 - B. Lord Uxbridge – Battle of Waterloo had his leg shot off and rode back to the surgeons who cut off the end of his leg and within a few weeks he was up and about and survived in an amazing way.
 - C. Marshal Udenou one of Napoleon’s Marshals was wounded 34 times in combat and still lived to age 81.
 - D. This is a reminder of a principle:
 1. In spite of all the suffering and unusual disasters one faces in a lifetime, and in spite of hurting in every possible way, in spite of great blessings ONE manages to survive all these things.
 2. The ONE thing you cannot survive and that is BOREDOM and it is worse than all the above cases.
 3. People are able to enjoy life if they hurt or have great blessing but in between these 2 is the great disaster which has afflicted the imbeciles of the last 2 generations of which we are apart.
 4. We have everything done for us so that we should have a greater interest in life and a keener fascination for capacity for life than has ever existed before.
 5. We have incredible time savers of many varied kinds and science has provided all sorts of comforts but with these comforts and more leisure time than anyone has ever had before, we have real problems with BOREDOM.
 6. Today they constantly try to assuage the guilt of those who wanted to end slavery in the past and those today who want to help the downtrodden of the WORLD by giving them what we have worked for and THIS IS BORING and DULL.
 7. At the time of this lesson there were TV programs about racism, holy rollers, anti war movies about WWII and the Civil War while today we have in every conceivable venue constant acceptance of Homosexuals and their degeneracy, anti war functions and bleeding heart don’t kill the criminal TV and Movies with matriarchal domination in every situation and **THIS IS INCREDIBLY BORING AND IRRITATING AND DISGUSTING**
 8. For people today it is impossible for them to recover from the dullness with alcohol so we have the greatest drug abuse problem in history in the world and everything in life today is to try to assuage dullness.
 9. The only thing which is attempted to solve this dullness is to TRY to solve it with EXTREMES and we have every type of extreme systems from self infliction to self indulgence.
 10. The CONCEPT of DISCIPLINE has disappeared TOTALLY
 11. People demand entertainment but not knowing how to be entertained and they demand stimulation and not finding it except through things which in fact destroy them.
 12. This is our DULL BORED GENERATION of PEOPLE.
 13. People are bored and over sleep and the reason is that they have no enthusiasm in life having NOTHING which they can do that is stimulating and have absolutely NO SYSTEM OF DISCIPLINE, whether it be exercise or study or what.

14. No one has to go down to the creek and haul water nor work for 12 hours a day and take vacations which is the DULLEST thing imaginable and for many the traveling is truly DULL.
15. This is tragic and it demonstrates clearly that most people totally MISS the reason we exist in the first place.
16. We must have great enjoyment in life and this does not come from entertainment since there is little which is in fact entertaining.
17. There is very little needed to entertain individuals who have capacity for life and every moment in life is stimulating and exciting and there has to be something better than the FAT, DUMB, and supposedly HAPPY BORING people who sit around and demand entertainment.
18. Women who call others by their last name or constantly use people's names whom they do not really know much about as if they are good friends are HORSEY WOMEN and there is nothing worse than this except a FULL BLOWN WOMEN's LIB individual.
19. With regard to the local church it matters not whether you are a member or know anyone in the congregation or know anything about the church activities but ONLY a matter of whether you have Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine or NOT.
20. It is ONLY a matter of discipline which means that you know the local church is open and when it is open and knowing these things you just show up and don't have any concerns as to who is or is not there.
21. IF you have capacity for life you have it because of Bible Doctrine and if you have Bible Doctrine you want MORE Bible Doctrine and if you want more Bible Doctrine then you will get it when you want it.

E. It is understandable why in the Napoleonic era so many people survived disaster and personal injury and why in the civil war the same and why when people were injured in battle they were poorly cared for and still survived.

1. These people had capacity for life and were not bored with life but again they did not TV nor mealy mouthed politicians nor bleeding hear liberals with all their goofy idiotic causes.
2. They had life and love it and were interested in it and thought life was fascinating and many of them were so intent on life occasionally they died because of their concentration on life.
3. Albert Sydney Johnson was so excited about beating the Yankees at the peach orchard area that he forgot he had been shot and was bleeding and he kept forgetting it and concentrating trying to get a Tennessee outfit to attack which he did and were successful and so busy in pushing back the Yankees that he forgot he had been shot and was bleeding and finally when he fainted and fell off his horse it was too late because he had lost most of the blood in his body and he died.
4. Life for him was so interesting that he could not stop to take care of a simple wound from which he should not have died.
5. Lord Uxbridge looks down at his leg and it is just dangling there and he said "I'll be Damned, I've been hit" and he cantered back on his horse to the surgeons who cut the remnant off and bandaged him up.
6. These people had interest in life and capacity for life and a Mental Attitude which has disappeared.
7. Fundamentalists are today either out trying to find a good time somewhere or trying to out legalistic each other all the time.
8. In addition there is no capacity nor lust for life on the part of the unbeliever and life is boring and dull and people think of ways to commit suicide and feel sorry for self and are so full of their miseries and propaganda today that there is no place in their soul for the fascinating and intriguing things of life.

II. The purpose of 2nd Timothy is to wipe the boredom from our minds and to get us away from dullness in LIFE and awaken us to the fact that we do not have to be on the verge of dying to appreciate what life is all about.

- A. WE will never have any real interest or enthusiasm for life or heaven or dying until we understand v3 PHRASE I.
- B. Why is Paul enthusiastic and enjoy life and have capacity for life and handle his adversity and blessing so marvelously and why did he have such a marvelous life.
 - 1. Paul was never bored and never found life dull or uninteresting and would never Yawn at life.
 - 2. The enthusiasm for life today does not exist.
 - 3. Paul is filled with the enjoyment and capacity for life in a total state of interest yet he is at this time in a total state of incarceration.
 - 4. At this time Paul's circumstances are one of great adversities but his attitude is one of GREAT INTEREST.
- C. Paul has GRACE now and before and it will be with him later and GRACE is what makes life fascinating and is what makes even death interesting and not only will death be more interesting than life but ETERNITY will be more interesting than death.
 - 1. Grace makes life so wonderful that you cannot wait for the next thing and the next and on and on and life is fascinating.
 - 2. A beautiful thing about grace is that you stay around to see how everything turns out and it is FANTASTIC.
- D. Grace from God is where we get capacity for and enthusiasm for life and what makes life interesting and even death and eternity and adversity interesting and makes all circumstances of life and death interesting.
 - 1. Grace makes for good times which it makes into better times and bad times into good times and it is the KEY.
 - 2. Remember NOT everyone has GRACE and it is the Plan of God for the believer.
 - 3. You can only keep on having GRACE by the consistent daily intake of Bible Doctrine.
 - 4. Without grace there is no capacity for life and life is boring and uninteresting and there is nothing of fascination in life and we are not prepared for adversity nor fun nor anything.

III. Principle of Grace:

- A. Definition and Concept:
 - 1. Grace is all that God is free to do for man on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - i. Paul and each of us as believer have expressed faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. There is no excuse for us having Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to be bored or being dull and having no capacity for life, love or happiness.
 - 2. Grace is the freedom and consistency of God to express his love to mankind without compromise or jeopardizing his essence.
 - i. No one can truly love and rightfully give apart from freedom and God gives out of total freedom his love to us consequently GRACE is the Plan of God to each of us whereby he guarantees that neither in life nor in death nor in eternity WILL YOU EVER BE BORED
 - a. If you are Bored then you CHOOSE to be bored and you reject Bible Doctrine.
 - 3. Grace is the plan, policy, function, and mechanics of the divine Modus Operandi in relation to each of us as believers.
 - i. God does all the work and providing and we receive all the benefit and blessing.
 - ii. Grace by concept depends on WHO and WHAT God is and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the Essence of God for each member of the trinity.
 - iii. GRACE is God's relationship with the believer as well as salvation.
 - 4. GRACE is all God can do for man after salvation throughout all eternity.
 - i. GRACE is therefore the GENIUS Of God and Bible Doctrine is the manifestation of that Genius.
 - 5. There have been very few men of true genius in history and how their genius gave them fantastic interest in life.

- i. They dies and are in Hades today but were still men of genius and still got the most out of life just because they had alert minds
 - a. Gaius Julius Caesar
 - i) He changed the roman empire like no other
 - b. Napoleon Bonaparte
 - i) He changed history like no other one has ever done
 - ii) No one has ever had such a profound effect on modern history
 - iii) He was a Corsican not french and France was at that time the most prosperous nation in the world when he came along.
 - iv) France had 25 million people and only the Russians had 24 million being close to them.
 - v) They were the most populated nation in western Europe and the most prosperous at that time.
 - vi) He said a very interesting thing about the french just before he died, “They are easily bored and because of it they will never accept for very long any system of government”.
 - vii) This has been one of the greatest prophecies about France right down to 1975 and he said this 155 years before this lesson.
 - viii) The french are easily bored and get bored with any system of government and they have never forgotten Napoleon.
 - ix) The ONLY Stability which the french had until this day is the Code Napoleon a system of government and law which he wrote.
 - ii. This is the same situation of the American people who are totally bored people and have no true interest in life.
 - a. The Americans had more interest in life when there were fewer books and less education and the Americans of the 1850’s were better educated than the ones today even though their education was not in the refinements of great libraries of today.
 - b. This occurred because we LOST our spiritual heritage and therefore the people have become bored.
 - c. NO people in any nation ever lose their spiritual heritage without becoming BORED with life in many forms.
 - d. The Jews when they lost their spiritual heritage in the time of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ were bored and expressed this in terms of LEGALISM.
 - e. All legalism is, is a MAXIMUM expression of boredom and they became ridged about their observance of the sabbath and this was the only way to generate any interest in Saturday and apart from this they were BORED.
 - f. Something has happened to the United States of America and most people cannot carry on a conversation about 4 or 5 different subjects.
 - g. Sex illustrates how people are bored today and everyone talks about it but no one really knows anything about it and experience is not a good teacher.
 - i) The distortions of sex emphasize this boredom with the prominence of Homosexuality, bestiality, pederasty and pornography and all these and the other sexual distortions are GHASTLY EVIL things.
 - ii) This is where sin and evil meet but they are called illnesses or genetic predilections.
6. GRACE is the answer to all these things but no one can understand GRACE without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- i. Grace is the genius of God and what makes life interesting is the SOURCE of LIFE.
 - ii. Review of the Origin of LIFE after Birth when God gives Neshemah.

- iii. The GIVER OF LIFE IS THE SECRET TO LIFE.
 - iv. The secret to life is GRACE and the secret to GRACE is Doctrine.
 - v. You cannot understand life until you understand grace and you cannot understand grace until you have been consistent in function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception under the principle of Self Discipline.
 - vi. Your enthusiasm cannot be stimulated on a pseudo basis and there is nothing in life which can give us happiness or blessing unless you have GRACE in your soul.
7. God is the source of temporal and Eternal Life and as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who has received this Eternal Life we must understand that GOD gave us life at physical birth and at our 2nd birth of regeneration at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- i. Now being born twice and we are BORED well if that is the case something is wrong and this is related to GRACE.
 - ii. Grace is the way everyone in the Human Race starts life.
 - iii. No matter what takes place in the mothers womb if God decides to NOT give Neshemah then no one would life ever.
 - iv. Therefore EVERY MEMBER of the Human Race is alive by courtesy of God and dies by the sovereignty of God.
 - v. If God was gracious enough to let us life and give us Eternal Life on the basis of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ WHY do we think that after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we can simply pick and choose a little here and there and find the secret to happiness and life.
 - vi. NOTHING in this case will ever make us happy since the thing in life we desire which we think will make us happy are are mere accourdaments in life.
 - vii. If we have more than one pair of pants or one dress or one shirt even a T Shirt, what is the good since we cannot wear more than one set of clothing at one time.
 - viii. Football, baseball, parties, sex whatever we use for entertainment are mere accourdaments in our closet of life and they have no meaning at all UNLESS you have capacity for life.
 - ix. If you don't have capacity for life then all of the accourdaments in the world are like a woman with a closet of 5 dresses trying to wear them all at the same time.
 - x. It is tragic that we as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ express boredom at anything in life and it is a sad commentary on our life and our capacity for living it.
8. Here we have Paul sitting in the worst dungeons in the history of the world the mamartine dungeon and yet he says "I KEEP ON HAVING GRACE" and Paul at that point had more than we ever will have.
- i. Paul did not have hot and cold running water nor a proper waste facility and did not have TV or Radio or any of the little things we possess and call "happiness" and yet he had a greater capacity for life than we can ever understand.
 - ii. Paul had maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is talking to Timothy who is now also possessing maximum Bible Doctrine in his soul.
 - iii. REVIEW the Doctrine of GRACE and all the aspects of GRACE
 - a. Saving
 - b. Living or Logistical
 - c. Rebound
 - d. Super
 - e. Ultra Super
 - f. Dying
 - g. Surpassing
 - iv. Paul is saying in great adversity that he "KEEPS ON HAVING GRACE"

9. Paul is talking to Timothy who is a total failure the worst wimp, a total disappointment and mama's boy BUT he did not GIVE UP after his failure.
 - i. He never gave up after reading the 6 chapters of the first letter from Paul.
 - ii. He had to read these but not only did he have to read them himself but he had to read them to the entire church of Ephesus.
 - iii. He did not feel sorry for himself for a minute and realized that it was time for him to get up and get going again and he did and recovered from his reversionism.
 - iv. Paul is now talking to Timothy in Super Grace and addressing himself to one with supergrace.
 - v. This fellowship of 2nd Timothy will be 1000% improvement over the rebuke of Timothy in the first letter.
- B. Paul knows on the eve of his death that his life has had meaning and is not even slightly discouraged and has that the attitude at this time is something which can be communicated to many generations.
 1. It is in the canon because this is the right way to die and a reminder to us that we are kept alive by God to NOT BE BORED but to have CAPACITY for life in all areas.
 - i. This capacity MUST be related to the Plan of God and to keep on having GRACE.
 2. Paul is recognizing that in every generation of Human History it is carried by believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 3. Paul is saying "My name is Paul" and he had taken his Sir Name and made it his Cognomen (Prinomen?) his original name being Saul.
 - i. Paul his Sir Name = Grace Orientation or Little canceled out Saul and then called himself PAUL.
 4. The Greatest man in the empire Lucius Domicius Hanabarbas Nero also did the same.
 - i. Lucius took his Sir Name which was a Sabine word for Hero and canceled out Lucius and made this his Cognomen (Prinomen??).
 - ii. This was in his case a delusion and total arrogance, Nero means hero which Nero was NOT.
 5. Paul with total Grace Orientation and capacity for life called himself little and this emphasized his understanding that it is the Grace of God which is most important in life not who or what we are or do.
 6. Nero should have carried his generation in history because he was ruler of the roman empire and had everything needed to do so but he did not carry his generation Paul did.
 - i. Paul carried his generation NOT PETER, JOHN, JAMES, etc.
- C. When Paul is talking about his ancestors he is talking about Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah, David and others who carried their generations and on the verge of his death he recognizes that HE also carried his generation.
 1. This is a phenomenal thing to realize.
 2. It does not happen to often in history but there are some generations where there are NO believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to support the generation.
 3. Therefore at those times God must raise up an unbeliever of Super Genius such as:
 - i. Alexander the Great
 - ii. Gaius Julius Caesar
 - iii. Napoleon Bonaparte
 - iv. Occasionally in history we find a man who is different than all other men in his generation and GREATER than they and whose brilliance carries the Human Race in some vicinity for a very long time.
 - v. This tells us that in that generation we were minus any Super Grace believers.
 4. Paul in this statement recognizes that under the system of grace of God he has had the privilege of holding up his generation and he is getting ready to pass this responsibility to Timothy so he can do it in his generation.

5. Paul is perpetuating the principle of his forefathers in his own generation and refers to his understanding of and perpetuation of the spiritual heritage.
- D. What makes HISTORY GROW – the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
1. Paul does not allude to his own family ancestors but to the spiritual heritage of Israel in the past.
 2. This spiritual heritage is the existence of at least one Super Grace believer in every generation.
 3. The implication is obvious and Paul has seen a great improvement in Timothy seeing him go from Reversionism to Super Grace in 2 years.
 4. Having recovered from reversionism Timothy has moved to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which is the ONLY Place he can receive the Standard needed from Paul to carry on the mission for his generation.
 - i. Paul is saying in effect, “Look Timothy you have had a rotten life even though everything was lined up and going for you because of your reversionism, I have had a wonderful life based on Bible Doctrine and as a Super Grace believer I have had the privilege of carrying the ball for my generation NOW you can also do so.
 5. Paul is counting on student Timothy whom he loves to perpetuate the spiritual heritage of the Royal Family of God for the next generation.
 6. This can only occur through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 7. Paul is therefore encouraging Timothy to PRESS ON and now that he HAS doctrine he must move ahead for MORE and MORE doctrine.
 - i. Paul and Timothy have no human family relationship, Paul is not his father and Timothy is not his son.
 - ii. Paul is challenging to a more important principle “You cannot build your happiness through your children and you don’t perpetuate greatness in another generation through your children”
 - iii. Not Napoleon, Alexander NO ONE EVER DOES.
 - iv. But there is perpetuation of spiritual heritage as Bible Doctrine is passed from one generation to another.
- E. Paul is not saying that he has lived a good or perfect life.
1. He is not saying he has clean hands in life
 - i. As an unbeliever he was one of the worst sinners who ever lived.
 - ii. As a believer Paul made one of the greatest mistakes that any great believer has ever made when he refused to go to Spain and went back to Jerusalem in emotional reversionism.
 2. Yet he comes to his dying moment with a pure or clean conscience.
 3. We have Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of Paul and this is responsible for his PURE conscience
 4. Paul has taken in so much Bible Doctrine that in the Right Lobe of his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his:
 - i. Frame of Reference
 - ii. Memory
 - iii. Vocabulary
 - iv. Categorical storage
 - v. Conscience or his norms and standards
 - a. These are based on whatever knowledge a person has in his Right Lobe
 - b. All conscience is based on norms and standards based on what you have learned.
 - c. This means that people who live in the jungle have no norms and standards about Laws of Divine Establishment principles and they would therefore worship images they made or animals etc.

- d. This also occurred in other cultures where they learned a bit more such as India where they thought that these animals were their ancestors and family and therefore would not harm them or eat them
 - vi. This is conscience and this depends on knowledge for its norms and standards
 - 5. A stupid or ignorant person has no conscience and this is why a stupid person can pass a lie detector test and why this is no good if a person is stupid or ignorant enough and why some criminals can lie while on a lie detector and make it work.
 - 6. Whatever you have in your conscience it is NO GREATER than WHAT YOU KNOW.
 - i. Your conscience will never exceed your knowledge of life.
 - 7. Paul has a pure conscience because HE has a maximum understanding of Bible Doctrine and LIFE.
 - i. Paul has murdered more people than anyone in his generation and made more mistakes than anyone in his generation and has sinned and failed as anyone would but comes to his DEATH with a pure conscience.
 - ii. This was caused NOT by his record before Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God nor his sins and failures in reversionism after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. That which gives him a pure conscience is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- F. Paul is passing on to Timothy the spiritual heritage of Human History
 - 1. In every generation believers are challenged to the perpetuation of Super Grace so that in ever generation history will have those who HOLD up history.
 - 2. In every generation there can be BLESSING from God for that generation and this means that there is perpetuation of tactical victory for the Angelic Conflict and perpetuation of the spiritual atlases who hold up the world with their Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo.
 - 3. Paul knows that the once wimpy Timothy being now in Super Grace can take the torch of spiritual heritage and carry it on in his generation.
 - i. He can be the ATLAS for this next generation.
 - ii. HE has turned around from being the wimpy mama's boy and now can carry the whole generation in Human History.
- G. Principle:
 - 1. Something has happened to Timothy in the 2 years since Paul wrote 1st Timothy, the once wimpy reversionist is now in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace having recovered from his reversionism.
 - 2. This contributes to Paul's dying Grace blessings
 - i. Now that Timothy has reached Super Grace Paul can die peacefully and can now pass the torch to someone before he departs to heaven.
 - ii. He rejects everyone else:
 - a. Titus who is truly a great person
 - b. Luke who is with him
 - c. all the others including Trophemus, Apaphroditis, Erastus all of them.
 - iii. He has his eye on Timothy to pick up the carry on and therefore he has to stay alive until Timothy reaches the point of being able to do it.
 - 3. In dying Paul has perfect Alde Lang Zine and is dying with wonderful memories and this is a truly wonderful thing.
 - i. Many die with horrible memories and regrets
 - ii. If you are bored with life then maybe this will be you who is bored with self in living and will be bored with self in dying and therefore has REGRETS and NO WONDERFUL memories..
 - iii. Paul is no longer ashamed of Timothy and Timothy is no longer a wimp and he is the one Paul selects to carry on the spiritual heritage.
 - 4. There is a principle of history where in every generation of Human History the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace carry that generation of history.

- i. Every stage of history has at least ONE special believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who carries the spiritual heritage for that generation.
 - 5. Divine blessing on the generation is directly related the remnant of believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace according to the election of Grace and that remnant has ONE torch bearer.
 - 6. Paul is dying very shortly and sees history from the Divine Viewpoint
 - 7. He rejoices that Timothy will be the one to carry on the spiritual heritage into the next generation.
 - i. Locked up in the dungeon he has this great memory.
 - ii. Of all the young men in the coming generation Paul sees Timothy as the one who will carry on the heritage of the Royal Family of God
 - iii. There are other believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who will have a part and make their contribution but the leader is always the important one.
 - iv. The others like Titus will follow.
 - v. In dying Paul can see HOPE for the next generation and this HOPE is wrapped up in the believer who was previously a wimp and unable to even handle one local church.
- H. There is something very personal about dying and while Paul is not at this writing gasping for his last breath he KNOW he will shortly be decapitated and lives under a shadow of death.
 - 1. His memories and prayers are for those Super Grace believer who will carry the next generation.
 - i. People who desire to leave a better situation for their children or grand children a better country of place are out of touch with reality.
 - ii. YOU CANNOT do it.
 - iii. All you can do is leave them the spiritual HERITAGE of Bible Doctrine and those who are associated with believer who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will be inevitably blessed.
 - 2. Paul is no longer ashamed of Timothy and the weak and wimpy Timothy is NOW STRONG and will be the leader in preservation of the spiritual heritage of the Royal Family of God.
 - i. He is therefore in Paul's memory and prayers both NIGHT and DAY

2Tim 1:3

v3: I, Paul, keep on having GRACE by means of the instrumentality of OUR God, through whom I am absolutely serving under a system of grace, with a pure conscience, on account of my Super Grace Jewish ancestors who did, this is why I constantly keep having a memory concerning you, Timothy, constantly in my prayers, by day and by night.

Lesson #3 Series # 469 2Tim 1:4

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. J. Zeemer Jr., Major, US Army Air Corps, Booka, Solomon Is, 16 Jun 1943
 - B. Raymond Zusman, 2nd Lt, 756th Tank Battalion, (Set up with cast offs from other organizations, 12 Sept 1944, Neroi Levour France.
 - 1. Killed 18 and Captured 92 Germans
- II. The greater combat, spiritual heritage, and what is and is not important in life.
 - A. It is very questionable whether people should have children or NOT.
 - 1. There must be a next generation
 - 2. Too many people depend on their children and grandchildren for happiness
 - i. This is a house of cards which WILL collapse.
 - B. If you do have children you must be OBJECTIVE and the average person does not have this and therefore should not have children.
 - 1. If only those qualified to have children did so there would be only five new children in each new generation.
 - C. What is wrong with people who look to those younger for their happiness.

1. People who give candy to children do so because they cannot make it with their own generation and by so doing can at least make a friend of someone so stupid as to think that if they receive candy from you you are next to God.
 2. They do this so children will think well of them but a child has not discernment and their opinion about anything is useless.
 3. It is normal for parents to love their children as it should be but children can be the cause of the greatest unhappiness in life if the parents are foolish enough to try to base happiness on them.
- D. Those who never have had children will pause to thank God for that blessing and when some idiot brings out the pictures of the kids tell them what they can do with these.
1. The only hope from one generation to the next lies in a principle so important that in reality it constitutes a major breakthrough in Bible Doctrine.
 2. NEVER must we base happiness on our children it is like being blindfolded in a room with 25000 women and picking one out as the one you will marry and complete the ceremony before removing the blindfold.
- E. ***Our happiness in life in our generation does depends on what our generation does NOT what the next generation does.***
1. A society which brags about its grand children is one of imbeciles.
 2. A society which depends for its happiness on how its children turn out is one of NON-Thinkers.
 3. NO ONE can ever predict what the next generation will do or the next or next.
 4. You never know how children will turn out and it is amazing that neither do they or anyone else.
- F. People often say they want to leave something better for the NEXT generation.
1. This is a total farce and a stupid remark and what the next generation does has NOTHING whatever to do with what we do in our generation and if our happiness depends on them we really have had it.
 2. The idea of having children is not the world's highest virtue and many times it is the quintessence of Stupidity.
 3. Many people who have many children will tell you it is NOT worth it and motherhood is not a christian virtue and is not next to godliness.
 4. For a man to get his Right Woman and to have a magnificent life with her and to have at least 5 true friends in his life is of utmost importance to him and these are a basis for happiness.
- G. There is nothing greater for a man to have in his life than to have 3 loves:
1. To love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. To love his Right Woman with all the capacity of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 3. To have at least 5 true friends in his lifetime before he dies.
- H. Life and the principles of life come in 2 categories:
1. The Divine Viewpoint as stated in Bible Doctrine
 2. The Stupid Viewpoint as stated in the policy of EVIL.
 3. When it comes to children and grandchildren MOST people are STUPID but this is instinctive.
 4. Some people are embarrassed when they should not be for NOT having children.
 5. Having children is not that great a thing nor a great virtue.
 6. We must have children to have another generation and we always will but if we don't the Chinese and blacks will make up the difference.
 7. You never should feel sorry for Old Maids and Bachelors who never married this is a stupid feeling at best.
- I. V4-6 are 3 of the MOST surprising verses ever in the bible.
1. If you have children and they turned out beautifully then simply thank God for this blessing and TAKE NO CREDIT for it since it is all GRACE.

- J. One of the greatest things in life is to have a true friend and many will never have.
 - 1. Politicians generally have NO friends and many acquaintances and the failed politician is generally the successful one.
- K. Paul is dying and always had money when he needed it but is wealthy in his death.
 - 1. He died without children, a category II love, a Right Woman.
 - 2. He had however 9 or 10 great and true friends who survived him.
 - i. At least 8 were Men 1 was a Woman.

III. Principle:

- A. One of the greatest accumulations of life is the treasury of TRUE Friends.
- B. Paul in this respect died a multi millionaire.
 - 1. You could never feel sorry for Paul one of the GREATEST men whoever lived and one of the happiest men ever to live.
 - 2. How can you feel sorry for someone who is above everyone else in history with happiness and one of the 3 or 4 greatest people ever to walk on this earth.
 - 3. Never feel sorry for someone who has no children, never got married,
- C. No one was ever wealthier in the category of True friends.
- D. Obviously 1st Timothy put a strain on a great friendship and calling a true friend every derogatory term available would certainly put a strain on the friendship there.
 - 1. How nice and refreshing to have a friend who is HONEST and PAUL is the true straight and honest friend.
 - 2. As a result of his directness his friend recovered and will be the leader of Super Grace believers who will carry the NEXT generation of Human History.
 - 3. Timothy who had the great potential of dying the Sin Unto Death not only recovered in 2 years and lost all his wimpiness but in the next generation he will lead all Super Grace believers and carry the next generation of history.
 - i. It is the super grace believer who carries that generation.
 - ii. There is always in every generation as shown by history LESS THAN 1% of those alive on the earth who are Super Grace believers and they carry the entire generation.
 - iii. The greatest people in any generation are the Super Grace believers, those who carry the generation.
 - 4. The United States of America survives constantly because
 - i. 5% of the people do all the thinking for the rest.
 - ii. Smart people carry the nation always.
 - iii. After the civil war Smart people like Edison carried the nation.
 - iv. It is always the people who can think who carry the nation and the only true reason any nation ever survives is because of the existence of a nucleus of Super Grace believers.
 - 5. Timothy will take the place of Paul as the one who carries the next generation.
 - i. With his recovery the friendship has been reestablished as a strong friendship.
 - 6. This Category III relationship between Timothy and Paul weathered the storm of Apostolic rebuke, censorship and discipline from Paul.
 - i. Timothy received the first letter from Paul in the spirit in which it was written, one of objectivity and Timothy therefore recovered.
- E. This passage is telling us that Paul truly desires to see Timothy again having him as a TRUE friend.
 - 1. Paul will DIE rich without money leaving many true friends and the admiration of his whole contemporary generation and any true student of Bible Doctrine and no one has been admired in history more than Paul.
 - 2. Anyone with TRUE friends likes to have them around when he is dying.
 - 3. Timothy's reversion recovery has resulted in Paul having pleasant memories of him.
 - 4. Timothy had a great response to the letter of 1st Timothy and did not react to the letter but realized how correct Paul was and he had a great emotional response to his letter from his objectivity.

5. Timothy took in the Bible Doctrine Paul wrote him in his letter and as he did it caused a response in his emotion and was able to say "I have a TRUE friend in Paul".
 6. True friendship is to hold up the mirror of Bible Doctrine to a friend's face and tell them to take a look at self.
 7. He also has tears of repentance and changed his mind making his recovery from reversionism.
- F. Paul with Sharing the Happiness of God causes Timothy's recovery to express his happiness to Timothy.
1. Paul has great happiness knowing Timothy has recovered from reversionism and knows that once more they are both in Super Grace Status Quo and now again have a GREAT relationship.
 2. Paul cannot and will not die before passing the responsibility for the next generation of believers to Timothy.
 3. Always in going from one generation to another someone must pass the responsibility for carrying the generation coming up to another who is qualified to carry that next generation.
 4. Paul passes this spiritual heritage onto Timothy.
- G. Paul now recalls the fact that for 3 generations there has been a heritage of Super Grace Status Quo believers.
1. This must go from Super Grace believer to Super Grace believer and not down through a family parents to child etc.
 2. For Timothy there are 3 generations of Super Grace believers in his family as well.
- H. Principles:
1. Thanks to the Grace of God and Plan of God the Human Race will perpetuate itself physically.
 2. God has guaranteed that the Human Race will exist throughout Human History to the conclusion of the Angelic Conflict therefore there will always be people for the next generation.
 3. This is dogmatic fact dependent upon the sovereignty of God.
 4. No 2 generations are ALIKE EVER.
 - i. It is obvious to us that prior generations have been FAR FAR better than present or upcoming generations and were WITHOUT drug addicts, queer fagot homos, long haired female males, ETC.
 - ii. The difference is that in every generation there will be at least a few Super Grace believers.
 - iii. When a generation is GREAT there must be many believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - iv. This is seen also in the level of prosperity in a generation since BLESSING in a generation is by association with the great believers.
 - v. The GREATER the number of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace the greater the blessing in that generation and the Super Grace believers HOLD UP the generation historically.
 - vi. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of a few people carry the generation.
 5. The perpetuation of spiritual heritage is dependent of man's response to grace in the area of his own nonmeritorious volition.
 - i. Spiritual heritage is thus perpetuated from the foundation of regeneration.
 - ii. Mankind must be BORN again to qualify for perpetuation of spiritual heritage.
 - iii. IT IS NOT physical birth which perpetuates spiritual heritage, but it is SPIRITUAL Rebirth.
 - iv. In the generation of the confederacy which fought in the civil war their parents were very particular about all of them going to church regularly and the dominant denomination was one which was very well oriented at that time the southern Presbyterian church.

- v. All of these people went to church and MANY were Born Again and in this generation many were Super Grace believers such as
 - a. Major Pellum a major in Jeb Stewart's Horse Artillery
 - b. Jeb Stewart was a Super Grace believer
 - c. Jeb Stewart was a personal friend of Stonewall Jackson a Super Grace believer.
 - d. That generation had a multitude of Super Grace believers.
- vi. 2 generations later they had a bunch of weak sisters.
- vii.
- 6. The NUMBERS of Super Grace believers DETERMINES the TREND of THAT generation.
 - i. You can do everything you can possibly do to teach and train children but ***you cannot live another persons life.***
 - ii. When it all comes down to what makes a great generation the secret is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - iii. What carries any given generation is the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - iv. As goes the attitude of the believer toward Bible Doctrine so goes the generation.
 - v. The greatest influence on a people is Bible Doctrine directly from or through the one who goes to Super Grace and indirectly from the one who is closely associated with the believer in Super Grace.
- 7. No matter how a generation starts whether hippies or red blooded Americans they could become the greatest generation in the nations history BASED ON THEIR ATTITUDE TOWARD Bible Doctrine.
 - i. There never is a generation which you have to give up on because AS GOES Bible Doctrine so goes that generation.
- I. Many people have broken hearts because of their children and when they have children in their future it changes their life sometimes for good and sometimes for the worse.
 - 1. It is not the children nor the training good or bad with good discipline and authority orientation which determines the future generations success or failure ONLY attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. Even good parents have children who turn out bad because even though they do their job with children well it is Bible Doctrine which makes the difference.
 - 3. Bible Doctrine can take the worst person and make them great, think of SAUL of Tarsus who turned from a christian murderer to the greatest christian in history.
 - 4. What a person is, is not related to his being a product of his genetics nor one of his environment.
 - 5. These can have an influence but if a person makes it as a great believer it is because he is a PRODUCT of the Grace of God.
 - 6. We must bring grace into our life and our homes for success.
 - 7. Children can go out in one night and UNDO everything you have spent a life time of training in.
- J. The one thing for any child which is more important than anything else in life is to have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 1. Reality is our personal life and friends and relationship with the lord and Right Man or Right Woman NOT what has occurred in the life of our CHILDREN.
 - 2. We must make our life and they must make theirs and it all depends on the same factors:
 - i. Bible Doctrine
 - ii. Grace.
 - 3. It is Bible Doctrine which will take the next generation and make them great but it is often difficult to see.
- K. Our generation SHOULD have been one which PUT DOWN:
 - 1. Women's Lib
 - 2. Communism

3. Homosexuality
 4. ILLEGAL immigration
 5. and many other things BUT we have failed so far miserably
 6. BUT again, maybe the next generation will be stronger and better equipped with Bible Doctrine to do this right.
- L. Spiritual heritage is perpetuated ONLY from the foundation of REGENERATION.
1. We are alive because God put into us at physical birth the Spark of Life, Neshemah.
 2. We are now born again and this gives us the chance to make a contribution to our own generation
 - i. This is why the most important thing we ever got into in our local church is PREP School.
 - ii. Children need just what Adults need and that is Bible Doctrine NIGHT after NIGHT.
 3. The only thing which has initiated, saved and preserved this nation is the Grace of God.
 4. In every generation it is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace which holds up the nation.
 5. The attitude of the believer toward Bible Doctrine is the essential key in the perpetuation and success of any nation in history.
 6. The only way anything in a nation is ever changed is based on what believers do after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with Bible Doctrine.
 7. If they take it the generation will fly ahead and if they leave it the generation will fall to ruin.
- M. Timothy, his mother and grand mother represent 3 generations of great spiritual heritage.
- N. **The perpetuation of spiritual heritage is the ONLY hope for any generation in any nation in Human History.**

2Tim 1:4

v4: I constantly long or have a great desire to see you, because I have remembered your tears, in order that I may receive great happiness and the inner happiness of Sharing the Happiness of God.

Lesson #4 Series # 469 2Tim 1:5

- I. True Spiritual heritage:
- A. Nothing a generation does in their time will make life and living better for our children and grand children.
 1. We do not need more laws in fact we need to purge many laws and have enforcement of the ones which actually make sense.
 2. We also need a great outburst of free enterprise in the nation and there is nothing good about the new laws being passed constantly so that the legislature can justify their existence.
 3. Laws which make it impossible to have OPEN Shops without Unions and therefore make it impossible for free enterprise to function.
 4. The more Legislators work the worse they make things since they are bleeding heart liberals for the most part and totally under the influence of evil and do nothing but that which will destroy this nation.
 5. If they had their way they would do it as quickly as possible.
 - B. With regard to children there are 2 things which you should have:
 1. You should have NO REGRETS when they become adults.
 - i. If you have regrets it is because you have not done your best in the area of discipline and allowed sentimentality to out way justice and wisdom.
 - ii. To take an infant and bring it to adult hood requires more intelligence, wisdom and time than most parents have today.
 - iii. Many people have regrets when their children reach adulthood and with good reason since the end product does not reflect the best characteristics of the parents in any way

- iv. Children are often a great source of unhappiness and embarrassment and were never designed to be a source of either of these nor happiness or pride as well.
 - v. When a parent has done his job and has a child who reaches adult he should be able to say NO REGRETS.
 - vi. When discipline was needed it was used, when training was required it was provided, when there was anything which the child wanted and it was within reason of the framework of the families circumstances it was also provided.
 - vii. You cannot spoil a child by giving him things but only by not disciplining or training him properly.
 - viii. NO PARENT should ever desire for his child some form of success or greatness but should desire that they be believers and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God if he understands what that means.
 - ix. With this attitude he will have no regrets with regard to their temporal success or failures but he should in fact Desire that they should HONOR the Lord above all else.
 - x. He should desire that they glorify the lord and whether they are prominent or not is inconsequential and this is a great trap of parenthood.
 - xi. There should be no regrets as the parent looks back at the childhood and forward into their future.
2. The parent should have wonderful memories of the child's life.
- i. It is a part of great pleasure in life to look back into the life of the child and have wonderful memories of them as they were growing up.
 - ii. It is not a pleasure when people who should not have children do so and have no good memories.
 - iii. EVERY Generation makes it's own friends, loves and life and certainly anyone who depends on his children for his happiness, capacity for life or blessing is a MORON and totally disoriented to reality.
 - iv. Children MUST never be made into a source of happiness or unhappiness a source of blessing or cursing.
 - v. If you do not have enough adulthood to get out and make your own friends in your contemporaries and find your happiness in Category I love of the lord, Category II love with some Right Woman or Right Man and Category III Love in great friendships then you are divorced from REALITY and do not know what life is all about.
 - vi. YOU should have friends and your children should never interfere with any of the 3 categories of LOVE.
 - a. Never with your love of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - b. Never with your love with regard to Right Man or Right Woman.
 - c. Never with your friendships.
 - vii. Many women are weirdos because she puts her children before her husband.
 - a. She is a woman who will live with regrets and bad memories.
 - b. She is only a child herself playing with Dolls who in fact are real people now and is more interested in her children than her husband.
 - c. There never was a time when a REAL woman put a child before her husband and never a time when a REAL man put a child before a woman he loved.
 - d. One thing which separates the boys and girls from the men and women is attitude toward children.
 - e. A woman who puts children before her husband will be an incredible PEST when she is a grandmother.
 - f. A man who puts children before his wife is going to be a pain in the ass and will reach his DOTAGE no later than age 45.
- C. In spite of you, often your children are going to make it in life and it should be BECAUSE of you.

1. You cannot make children LEARN Bible Doctrine but you can train and discipline them but you must start EARLY in their life.
2. You must have wisdom in doing so.
3. Many of us have been under unfair treatment in the employment we have had but have done a good job at it despite that.
4. It takes a LOT to do this but it takes a LOT more to take a child which is all bad material and make it GOOD material but YOU HAVE TO MAKE IT GOOD MATERIAL.
5. It is never too late but you have to stick with certain principles and if you don't it will be too late for you.

II. Principles of v5-6

- A. Thanks to the Grace of God and Plan of God the Human Race will perpetuate itself physically.
 1. Whether we participate in this function or NOT the Human Race will continue and there will be a NEXT generation and there will always be children.
 - i. Children are born under the most incredible circumstances
 - a. In battle
 - b. During Earthquakes
 - c. Great Adversities in life
 - d. Great prosperity in life.
 2. The human race will go right on to the end of TIME.
- B. God has guaranteed that the Human Race will continue to exist to the end of Human History to the end of the Angelic Conflict.
 1. In spite of all the adversities of life we will have another generation and another demonstrates that there is a GOD in heaven and he keeps his word.
 - i. The Jews are a prime example of this still being alive and well today.
 2. There is no way even Satan himself has found a way to STOP any generation from progressing and COUNT ON IT that history will move on with our without you, over, under, around or THROUGH you.
- C. This dogmatic principle of the perpetuation of Human History and the Human Race is a matter of the sovereignty of God.
 1. NOT my will or your will but the sovereignty of God and many volitions contribute to it but it is under the direct control of the sovereignty of God.
- D. The perpetuation of the spiritual heritage is dependent NOT on the sovereignty of God but on Man's volition and response to the Grace of God in the realm of nonmeritorious function.
- E. Spiritual heritage is perpetuated from a foundation of regeneration and man must be born again to QUALIFY for spiritual heritage perpetuation.
 1. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God ONLY means you are qualified not that you have arrived and in fact are part of the perpetuation ONLY that you have STARTED on the path.
- F. The key to perpetuation of the Spiritual Life is found in Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine with the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception leading to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace LIFE.
- G. Paul is no longer ashamed of Timothy because while he has been a wimp and total failure he has not recovered from reversionism and moved on to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- H. Neither is Paul ashamed of timothy's mother or grandmother who represent one of the most unusual situations recorded in the bible a 3 generation family and each is in the spiritual heritage as well.
 1. Timothy is a 3rd generation Super Grace believer a Record.

III. Paul and memories of Timothy and his family.

- A. Paul receives the memories of Timothy and his reversionism, his recovery and his subsequent advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the memory also of this being the same sequence which occurred for his Mother in her move to Super Grace.

1. Paul no regrets (He has no children) perfect memories thanks to the fact that Timothy recovered from reversionism and he did it from his own consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and this gives Paul wonderful memories.
- B. When we Die we will all have if Lucid the function of our memory centers.
1. People who take a long time to die have a great blessing in that they have a lot of time to recall loved ones, old friends, events of the past, ETC.
 2. This is often a part of dying grace as it is with Paul here.
 3. He has a few months before he will be executed and has lots of time to reflect on his life and having a GREAT LIFE of happiness and blessing he has GREAT memories in dying.
 4. Paul having lived a wonderful life he has fantastic memories in his soul which he runs through again and again.
 5. Paul is the END of his line and is without children and has NO REGRETS concerning his life and friends.
- C. Paul is here recalling the fantastic principle of SPIRITUAL HERITAGE with great blessing to himself.
1. Not speaking from under a mask this is from classical Greek and what had occurred during Greek drama productions.
 - i. This in effect means to be an actor, and it is not always true but MOST actors who are really good have a lot of phoniness in them.
 - ii. It is also called TALENT and they have to be phony to pretend they are something they are not to be successful in acting.
 - iii. An actor was synonymous with being a Hypocrite ‘hupokrites’ in the Greek.
 - iv. This MEANS “Non Hypocritical” or REAL or GENUINE.
 2. This is the genuine Bible Doctrine in contrast to false doctrine or Evil.
 3. Paul, Dying, has as a pleasant memory that Timothy has REAL or GENUINE Bible Doctrine in this Stream of Consciousness of the Soul having recovered from reversionism and moved to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 4. Timothy has now joined the ranks of those who will perpetuate the spiritual heritage in the next generation.
- D. We don’t know what doctrines made Timothy a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace but that the principle is emphasized that in Timothy there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which has put him into Status Quo Super Grace.
1. Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resulting in Super Grace is a very dramatic principle and one which Paul who has only a short time to live is using as a focal point of his memory while he is in prison and in adverse circumstances but NOT unhappy.
 2. You cannot make a Super Grace believer and one which has memories such as this unhappy with any circumstances of life.
 3. He has too much on the inside for any outside pressure to get to him.
 4. Paul is dying under Divine Good and has these WONDERFUL memories.
- E. Lois (gr – Agreeable) the grandmother of Timothy was a woman many years prior who became a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and who persisted after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. She reached Super Grace Status Quo and participated in the perpetuation of the great spiritual heritage.
 2. The Daughter of Lois named Eunice (gr Eunike – Great Victory) was raised correctly introducing her to Bible Doctrine early in life prior to age 10 and if this is done it will always pay dividends in the child’s life.
 3. Eunice was taught Bible Doctrine from early childhood and when she became an adult contrary to all she had been taught she married a handsome Greek man who was an unbeliever and entered her own reversionism.

4. Grandmother Lois had the sense to introduce her daughter to doctrine when she was young but had the monstrous experience of watching her daughter do everything WRONG and she could do nothing about it.
5. Grandma had to sit back and keep her mouth shut having done all she could when Eunice was growing up and at home.
6. Paul is no longer ashamed of Timothy or his wonderful spiritual heritage and the best thing parents can leave their children is Bible Doctrine but to be effective it must be in the soul of the believer.

F. This verse is a double illustration of **Prov 22:6**

1. This does not apply to Teen Aged children who will always go out of the home and raise hell.
 - i. This occurs especially if the parents are legalistic.

Prov 22:6

v6: Train up a child in the way he should go, and when he is old or mature he will not depart from it.

2. It takes some people into their final years to even accept Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior.

G. Lois trained Eunice

1. Lois became a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. She had the honor of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and passing the spiritual heritage on to her daughter.
 - ii. She is opposite of Women's liberation imbeciles.
 - iii. She carried her generation.
 - iv. She was a magnificent southern LADY and a spiritual atlas and carried her generation in history.
2. Having trained her daughter after her Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in her early adulthood, 20's, Eunice reacted to doctrine and rejected what she had been taught.
3. The result was that she made a bad marriage to a very handsome Greek. **Acts 16:1**
 - i. He was an unbeliever but his mother was a believer in Super Grace
4. In reversionism Eunice married an unbeliever and there is no such thing as the Right Man of a believer female being an unbeliever.
 - i. If a believer female marries an unbeliever there is nothing in her soul except stone.
 - ii. NO woman can ever make a greater mistake as a believer than to marry an unbeliever.
5. Obviously the unknown Greek was not her right man she being a believer and he not.
6. However the bad marriage resulted in 2 benefits
 - i. God turns cursing into blessing where a person leaves reversionism and moves ahead to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - ii. She recovered from her reversionism and reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. (**Prov 22:6**)
 - iii. She had a son whom she called Timothy (gr – He who honors God).
 - iv. There is no way to predict what an infant will do and in view of her bad record in the Spiritual Life it took a great deal of audacity to come up with this name.
 - v. She knew Prov 22:6 and followed it dedicating herself to training her child.
 - vi. This child was going to be taught doctrine as soon as he could think and the first words he would hear as an infant would be of doctrinal content.
 - vii. She as her mother carried her generation as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - viii. She therefore trained her son in the way he should go as well.
 - ix. Lois had the privilege of seeing this principle of Prov 22:6 fulfilled in both her daughter and grandson.
7. NO matter how a child fails if that child gets involved with Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine he will never fail.

- i. There is no such thing as a child which cannot be recovered but they must learn by themselves.
 - ii. They must enter the school of hard knocks and learn by hurting.
 - iii. Children who will not learn by discipline and concentration can learn only one other way IE HURTING.
 - iv. This applies to everyone and you either learn by concentration and discipline using your mind or by hurting in your experiences.
- 8. The people who learn by hurting are STUPID and therefore we all have a bit of stupidity and this is the HARD WAY
 - i. The best way is to learn by concentration and God gave us a mind and we should be pleased to use it.
 - ii. A Child learns 2 ways also, by hurting from discipline such as spankings and by listening and concentrating.
 - iii. The must eventually learn by listening and using their head rather than getting spanked and using their butt.
 - iv. Heads you win Tails you lose.
- 9. The most difficult thing a parent must do is to turn loose a child to learn by hurting.
 - i. If a parent has Bible Doctrine he will never allow the painful experiences of his offspring in learning the hard way to ever detract from HIS own happiness.
 - ii. A parent is an adult and having a love for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ through Bible Doctrine and for his spouse and for friends and has capacity for every aspect of living and happiness and one things which has the potential to make you more unhappy than anything else is your child but this will never occur if you are moving toward or in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo.
 - iii. Even that which could make you unhappy will never be able to do it if you have enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv. Having children is not as simple as an act of sex and a little pleasure.
 - v. There must always be thinking in the soul since once you take responsibility for bringing children into this world you assume more responsibility than you have ever had or ever will have in all your life.
 - vi. They never grow up the way you think they will.
 - vii. Children require training for the development of their souls.
- H. Pattern of the first generation illustration:
 - 1. Lois trained Eunice in Bible Doctrine
 - 2. She rebelled as a young woman resisted the doctrine and fell into reversionism.
 - 3. In reversionism she married the wrong man; Inevitably.
 - 4. Her accumulation of failures was inevitable Divine Discipline which awakened her to her failings.
 - i. She learned from hurting and hurting and finally realized that she needed to get back to Bible Doctrine.
 - 5. She recovered from her reversionism
 - 6. She advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and established the command post of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 7. She had a son, Timothy.
 - 8. Her hope was to perpetuate, NOT a NATURAL, but a Spiritual heritage.
 - i. She named her son Timothy because she was going to emphasize the spiritual heritage.
 - 9. She had to name him Timothy having dedicated herself to the principle that ONLY through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can there ever be happiness in life.

10. Grandmother Lois had the privilege of seeing the fulfillment of Prov 22:6 for when Eunice was OLD she did not depart from her spiritual heritage but received from Lois the spiritual heritage and carried her generation because of it.
 11. You cannot ever make a better world for the next generation and this thinking is EVIL, the thinking of Satan who is ruler of this world and would like just that to be the case.
 - i. Satan will provide for ever generation the same environment he has always provided EVIL and MORE EVIL.
 - ii. No one ever makes a better generation for the next generation.
 - iii. Many children inherit wealth and power and influence BUT this inheritance is of no value and the only thing which counts is the passing on of Bible Doctrine.
- I. Eunice To Timothy:
1. Eunice trained Timothy in Bible Doctrine.
 2. Timothy advanced in a remarkable way until Paul left him at Ephesus.
 - i. He had failed before at Corinth but at Ephesus his failure was colossal 1Timothy.
 - ii. He entered into the various stages of reversionism LIKE HIS MOTHER before him he failed miserably.
 - iii. His mother claimed Prov 22:6 and the shock to Timothy being under incredible Divine Discipline and hurting to the extreme was the Epistle from Paul which came when he was hurting the most.
 - iv. Divine Discipline of Hurting and Hurting More caused him to begin to think and assimilate Bible Doctrine so that he moved out of reversionism and ahead to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace again.
- J. The beautiful pattern of GRACE
1. 3 generations related physically Grandmother, Mother and Son.
 2. A thousand times more important than the genetic heritage between these 3 generations was the spiritual heritage which carried Human History for 3 generations.
 - i. Lois carried her generation.
 - ii. Eunice carried her generation
 - iii. Timothy carried his generation.
 3. We have 3 generations moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. They all went from Saving grace, to living or Logistical Grace, to Super Grace, to Dying Grace.
 4. Parents who have been faithful in teaching Bible Doctrine to their children and training them daily under the Grace Apparatus for Perception under their right Pastor Teacher should never be discouraged when their children APPEAR to turn out bad.
 5. When the children begin to resist Bible Doctrine and become reversionistic and yield to evil and become apostate and blasphemous if YOU as parent are a believer with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and capacity for life and living you will NEVER let your children ruin your LIFE.
 - i. Your capacity from Bible Doctrine will bring you friends and loved ones.
 - ii. You will understand the principle that the NEXT generation must live their life as you have lived yours.
 - iii. The people who understand this least are those bull headed ones who lived their life the most and listened their parents the least.
 - iv. You have to go right on living.
 6. Doctrine pays off GREAT dividends and when your children nose dive into reversionism you have contemporary friends, you are a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and have Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and capacity for all aspects of living and have Sharing the Happiness of God and go right on living YOUR LIFE in HAPPINESS.
 - i. This applies to any disaster or catastrophe which comes your way but here is in reference to children gone bad.

- ii. This is a difficult problem of seeing their children turn into everything which is disgusting to them and destroy themselves in every way.
- 7. The principle we must learn is:
 - i. YOU MUST LIVE YOUR OWN LIFE.
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher can teach Bible Doctrine and how to live and how to die and how to reach heaven with great rewards awaiting but the Pastor Teacher cannot live the life for another believer and therefore should not ever counsel.
 - iii. Each person alive today was issued by God at physical birth into which God stuck Neshemah the Spark of Life and therefore we must EACH individually LIVE OUR OWN LIFE.
 - iv. In addition to the soul God issued us a BODY and the body is what separates our souls.
 - v. We can be taught how life is and what doctrine says but we must individually and personally take this and use it ourselves in our life and our experiences.
- 8. When loved one's die you miss them and remember them tenderly and wonderfully under Alde Lang Zine but you do not give up you go right on living.
 - i. There are 2 great disasters in life which can shake you to the core:
 - a. If your children go bad you must go right on living.
 - b. When your loved one's die you must go right on living
 - c. YOU GO ON LIVING UNTIL THE LORD CALLS YOU HOME.
 - d. You don't become a ghoul or weirdo but go right on living.
 - ii. You never collapse after these things and must continue life under the grace plan of God.
 - iii. You must go on with life if your children fail in their life despite loving your children which is totally normal but your children are not your source of happiness.
 - iv. At some time you may have the great privilege of seeing Ps 22:6b come to fruition and your children may pass through many heartaches of Divine Discipline and many disappointments in life and hurt but when they are OLD they never forget the testimony of Super Grace parents told them.
 - v. Children never forget what their parents taught and what they were exposed to in Bible Doctrine teaching in the local church.
 - vi. Their bitterness of failure, the disillusion of life, disaster of wrong decisions, the pursuit of the fantasy of Pleasure will accumulate in shock after shock and they will hurt BUT they will recover.

2Tim 1:5

v5: **When I receive remembrances, When I remember or recall, (considering your (Timothy) reversionism, recovery and Super Grace Status Quo and that your mother went through the same thing), the real or genuine high quality doctrine in you, which resident doctrine first resided in your grandmother Lo'is and also your mother Eunice now I have confidence or then I am confident, that it (doctrine) is also in you.**

Lesson #5 Series # 469 2Tim 1:6

- I. Principle of Historical Interpretation and application to our LIVES.
 - A. Children are NOT the source of happiness for parents.
 - 1. To the extent you try to make children the source of your happiness to that extent you can only be miserable and vulnerable to every kind of adversity.
 - B. We have learned the importance of being able to face the death of loved ones and survive and move on in life.
 - 1. God has provided a means of blessing us even through this personal disaster.
 - 2. This is also true when children fail.
 - C. The Super Grace believer carries EACH generation and there is no such thing as making a better future for your children or grandchildren.

1. This is one of the big excuses for the ridiculous attempts at changing the constitution and its interpretation and changing constitutions as was attempted or done in TX in the 70's all which will cut into and cut out many freedoms.
 - i. The greatest governments are those which do the least and this is certainly true when it comes to legislative bodies and we need LESS laws not more and we need the functional laws enforced.
2. We face propoganda constantly from government, liberals, environmentalists and many others that we must try to leave a better world for our children and grandchildren.
3. This is a true farce and a myth and nothing can be further from the truth and EACH generation will make its own success or failure and each generation's success depends on the number of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

II. Doctrine of historical interpretation:

- A. Interpretation of History is a very tricky function and has led many people down the path to great EVIL and the influence of evil in reversionism.
 1. Historical Interpretation generally depends on Human Viewpoint as seen classically in the history of FRANCE.
 - i. The old Regime of the Bourbon Dynasty and the French Revolution are set in contrast to each other.
 - ii. The Old Regime – 1715 the Death of Louis XIV and goes to 1789
 - iii. The Revolution – Begins 1789 and is stopped by Napoleon 1795
 2. Never in the history of any country have there been 2 greater contrasts than these 2 settings.
 - i. Almost every french historian either reacts to one and tries to make the other great.
 - ii. Neither can ever succeed but they are so very contrasting that historical interpretation hits a great roadblock.
 - iii. The Old Regime of the Bourbons came to a sudden close with the french revolution.
 - iv. It had lasted as a monarchy for over 800 years and like most of your great countries in Europe the Monarchy was the basis for forming the national entity.
 3. Historians are conditioned by the period IN WHICH THEY WRITE rather than by the period which they are investigating.
 - i. This is seen by Adolph Kier did not like the Bourbon Restoration of the 19th century and Louis XVIII was a great jackass as he probably was.
 - ii. There are OTHERS who turned the revolution into a rosy myth and romanticized it totally.
 - iii. This is epitomized by many of the historians in France over the centuries.
 - iv. These men basically reacted to something occurring in THEIR time which gave them a distorted view of the past.
 - v. Historians are supposed to correctly assemble and then correctly evaluate the events of the past.
 - vi. Today in France the historians are generally socialistic and under the influence of evil Marxist Theories.
 4. This is very often the problem with interpretation of history and in many periods of history like in the 70's in the United States of America the people blame all the problems on Jews and advocate getting rid of them.
 - i. In addition some blame everything on communists but fail to recognize that Plain old mediocrity and stupidity and inefficiency in our own government are responsible in a great part for many of the world's ills.
 - ii. It never occurs to anyone that there might be other overriding causes.
 - iii. It never occurs to anyone that the bible explaining that we all have an Old Sin Nature so that all of us are sources of potential problems and difficulties.
 5. This is the "OVERSIMPLIFICATION OF HISTORY" and is illustrated by the "Single Cause" interpretation of history.

- i. Defay blamed the revolution on “free masonry”
 - ii. Another blamed it on 18th century Philosophy
 - iii. Actin blamed it on the American revolution
 - iv. Others blamed it on Economic difficulties
 - v. Others the misery of the Peasants
 - vi. Others the Intellectuals
 - vii. Others the price of BREAD
 - viii. Others on social contracts
 - ix. others on french military Defeats
6. Single cause people cannot ever interpret anything in life and always want 1 cause for every problem.
- i. They settle all life’s problems in their mind with 1 cause and exclude all evidence which disproves their concept.
 - ii. This is how gossips get started in society and in the local church.
 - iii. We see this in the Russian revolution especially in the interpretation of the WORST of all the people involved, Lenin.
 - a. Lenin and Trotsky worked together and when Trotsky got out he was eliminated.
 - b. They used to think about a revolution and estimated that the entire proletariat of Europe would back them and knew they could not succeed in having a revolution in Russia unless it caught on in Europe as well.
 - c. It was Lenin who said that Russia was the most backward nation in the world and that was because it was Asiatic in Character.
 - d. He said Russian civilization had never amounted to much because of this influence.
 - e. Therefore Lenin could not see how socialism could succeed in RUSSIA alone and gambled that socialism would not stop at the Russian borders.
 - f. He once said **“Once the revolution won in the highly industrialized and civilized countries of the west then the construction of socialism would assume an international character. Then an advanced Europe and possibly the United States of America would help Russia with machines, technical advice, administrative experience and education.”**
 - g. This did not happen this way at all UNTIL Franklin D. Roosevelt.
 - h. Russia had the political initiative to start the revolution in 1917 but SOCIALISM could not carry it.
 - i. Therefore in 1919 the Bolshevik party set up a communist Internationale but this did not work either.
 - j. By the end of the civil war in Russia in 1921 it became obvious to Lenin that the Parliamentary regimes of western Europe had resisted the proposition of communism therefore the soviet union stood alone the prodigy of devastation and poverty.
 - k. He ignored all the “beautiful” socialistic philosophy and had to readmit capitalism into the new policy of 1921 and admitted they had to use capitalism.
 - l. Stalin in 1924 had to declare the doctrine of socialism for 1 country only which admitted that the Russian revolution had failed everywhere else.
 - m. He admitted by this that the Russians did not have enough brains to do anything to end the revolution like Napoleon did he being the greatest genius in all of history outside of Julius Caesar and Napoleon did more to turn history than any other single person.
 - n. Nothing has ever been the same in the entire world because of Napoleon but there was no Napoleon to pick up and stop the stupid revolution in Russia.

- o. Lenin as an interpreter of history had failed miserably and communists can only interpret history when they come out with a bald faced lie about the success and progress of the people under communist socialism.
 - iv. One of the best communist interpreters of history was Zino Vieve and in a message given in October 1920 to the congress of the German independent socialists he admitted that “It was never anticipated that we would have to resort to so much terror in the civil war and that our hands would become so blood stained”.
 - a. This is documentation of the FACT that the only way Russian or Chinese or any type or brand of communism ever works is EVIL VIOLENCE.
 - b. By the end of the civil war in Russia in 1921 the workers and peasants who had supported about 100,000 communists had been deprived of all their political freedoms and the foundations were laid for a 1 party system.
 - c. While the Russians have many elections they don’t tell you there is ONLY 1 party in Russia to vote for.
 - d. In violence the Bolsheviks like the Jacobeans in the french revolution before them could not distinguish between friend and foe and consequently when you cannot differentiate between these 2 and you cannot interpret history you just have to KILL everyone and anyone that says there is anything but 1 party.
 - e. This is EXACTLY what the Russian communists did and this established their political monopoly which in other terms is called TYRANNY.
 - f. It has never worked and never will work and even the Russians have repeatedly miscalculated on their interpretations of history.
- 7. Misinterpretation of History in the United States of America.
 - i. The attitude of the American people is “Don’t bother me with facts”.
 - ii. Most historians and those who have studied it extensively are not only sympathetic with the south but recognize that the greatest system of patriotism which has ever existed has only been in the south.
 - iii. In the Northern states there is only one place where freedom has been understood at all and that is the state of Indiana.
 - iv. The only other state which tried to secede from the union in 1861.
 - v. This does not mean that every Yankee is a Jackass.
 - a. General Winfield Scott Hancock came to TX after the war but was relieved of his command eventually because he was too kind to Confederate officers and tried to help them whenever possible and he kept the blacks from getting their 40 acres from the government and he did more than the KKK did in the period after the war to keep the Blacks under control.
 - vi. Ulysses S. Grant whose name was in fact Hiram Ulysses Grant but his mothers maiden name was Simpson so he changed his middle name to Simpson and Quit drinking for a while.
 - a. He has been pretty much maligned by the people of the south but some such as LEE had nice things to say about Grant.
 - b. When Lee surrendered at Appomattox Grant graciously Paroled the entire army or Northern Virginia but the Secretary of War Stanton said Everyone could be paroled except Mosby and his Raiders but Grant ignored his comments and paroled all of them..
 - c. John S Mosby who was one of the great fighters for the confederacy always appreciated Grant for that especially because the Yankees kept sending marshals down to arrest him while he was practicing Law in Virginia.

- d. He found himself in Jail so many times that his wife went to the White House because she knew president Johnson personally and thought she would be graciously received but He kicked her out.
 - e. She then went to General Grant and he not only got Mosby Out of jail and sent a letter which said no one was to touch this man again and also did this for General Yule also who had lost a leg and Johnson was rude to her but grant got him out of jail again.
 - f. Grant would always end up by saying “There has been suffering Enough”.
 - 8. So for any historical interpretation to be accurate you MUST collect all the facts possible first and then use your BRAINS to assemble them properly.
 - i. The best historian who ever wrote on ancient history in the United States of America is Willis West.
- B. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History
 - 1. Directly through his divine essence and he never loses control of anything.
 - 2. Indirectly through the Laws of Divine Establishment set up to perpetuate the Human Race and allow freedom in every generation for evangelism and faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and freedom to express Positive Volition in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - 3. Permissively allowing human volition to function in this phase of the Angelic Conflict.
 - i. This is why evil is permitted to continue in the world.
 - ii. This is why Evil and Human Good were rejected at the cross, they are the policy of Satan and the effects of that policy in opposition to the Grace Policy of God the central issue in the Angelic Conflict.
- C. The bible is the key to historical interpretation:
 - 1. Historical Interpretation related to God, Unseen angels and Mankind can only be put together properly through understanding of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. The more you know about Bible Doctrine the more capable you are of historical interpretation.
 - ii. Bible Doctrine is the basis for the correct interpretation of history and to see history correctly one must possess Divine Viewpoint.
 - iii. History is a set of facts about the Human Race but these cannot be properly correlated unless there is understanding of such doctrines as the Old Sin Nature, power lust, materialism lust, true law and distortion of law.
 - iv. Our liberal congress would do more for this country if they would simply go home and never show up for congress at all.
 - a. Every time they pass a law it is more weird than the one before it and it chips away a little more at our freedom YET the constitution was DESIGNED with our freedom and its protection as its foremost purpose.
 - b. These people were incapable of understanding the constitution and incapable of understanding history but had a mealy mouthed line so that they picked up the vote of women and lazy good for nothing scum on welfare and today ILLEGALS who are allowed to vote and thus got themselves elected to our highest offices in the land and don't know Americanism from communist peasantry.
 - 2. To correlate and interpret the facts of history Bible Doctrine must be resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this limits the perspicacity in this field of understanding ESPECIALLY if he is functioning outside the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - i. To correctly interpret history one must understand EVIL, REVERSIONISM, APOSTASY and be able to distinguish them from SIN.
 - ii. Anyone who has ever studied history can tell you that SIN never kept a great man from greatness and never kept anyone from doing anything.
 - iii. Sin is a NON issue in the Human Race, especially NOT for the believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who understands and uses Rebound because Jesus of

Nazareth, the Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all our sins.

- iv. Sin does not keep us out of bible study nor does it keep the Pastor Teacher from teaching Bible Doctrine but his does not mean that either has not sinned today.
 - v. Sin did not stop, George Washington, George Patton, Douglas MacArthur, Robert E Lee, Andrew Jackson from being the greatest men in our history.
 - vi. Sin never kept any good Pastor Teacher from teaching Bible Doctrine effectively nor has is ever ruined a Pastor Teachers ministry.
 - vii. What ruins a pastors ministry and can ruin every man woman and child is EVIL and Reversionism.
 - viii. We sin every day and are still alive and breathing despite the Divine Discipline we receive because of sin.
 - ix. Carnality should never be a hindrance to anything but EVIL is a hindrance to EVERYTHING and if this principle is not understood how can history be understood and interpreted properly.
 - x. How can we understand:
 - a. Napoleon who committed Adultery Hundreds of times.
 - b. Julius Caesar was the greatest unbeliever in history but was also the greatest hell raiser in between doing things great.
 - c. There have been very few little miss goody two shoes who have been great in history but they also have sinned.
3. What holds up every generation of history is the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and these are the spiritual atlas' who hold up every generation in history.
- i. Grandmother Lois, Mother Eunike with Paul, Son Timothy
 - ii. This is not an advocate for Sinning your way through life to be great.
- D. To properly interpret history one must understand
1. Dispensations, the Church Age, the Royal Family of God.
 - i. Many historians recognize simple facts such as the fact that ROME is the central hub in history around which all history rolls.
 - a. Rome can be considered a great lake into which all the streams of ancient history flow and out of which all the streams of modern history flow.
 - ii. The establishment student of history as an unbeliever can understand many things as well such as:
 - a. When the Greeks made great intellectual and political contributions to history and had great genius in drama, music and philosophy all of this was destroyed by their reversionism.
 - b. Solon was the smartest Greek of all and showed us what every legislative branch of government should do in his setting up a system of law which they voted on and accepted including the law that only Solon could change any of them for the next 10 years and he then LEFT Athens for 10 years and did not return.
 - c. This was a wonderful thing and one of the greatest things ever to happen to the Athenian government having a legislative body which was out of business for 10 years.
 - d. The Unites States of America and every state would benefit from this.
 - e. When ever there is a LIBERAL Majority which comes into power and comes up with a constitution or a set of laws or an interpretation of our constitution you don't even have to read them you can smell them they are so bad.
 - f. (SEE the Affordable Care Act which had to be passed before it was read to understand it) this certainly has not made things better in any way for the next generation.
 2. The roman empire was a GREAT thing in history.

- i. Alexander the Great being one of the greatest men in history and in 12 years conquered most of the civilized world.
 - a. He did many wonderful things but became a “One Worlder” therefore everything he did disappeared except his setting up the Greek language so that it would be ready for the writing of the New Testament Scripture.
 - b. His human genius took him in the wrong direction and it must be led by Bible Doctrine.
 - c. Human genius is limited by IGNORANCE of Bible Doctrine and it is better to be one point above MORON and have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul than to be a human genius without it.
3. The roman empire is the center of history because Rome stands for Government by Law and by Laws of Divine Establishment principles.
 - a. Even the bible calls the roman empire the “Fullness of Time” the right time.
 - b. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came during the roman empire not during the greatness of Greece not during the Athenian greatness, not during the Hellenistic monarchies, NOT During the ROMAN Republic but during the Roman Empire.
 - c. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came after Julius Caesar and Caesar set up a system of function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and that is when Christ came.
4. It takes Bible Doctrine and Divine Viewpoint to see what happened to conservatives in history.
 - i. The conservatives are always disappearing in history and they are very scarce today.
 - ii. Many see advantages of conservative viewpoint but they do not understand the foundation and superstructure of conservatism is.
 - iii. Conservatism is NOT just being to the right of left but is a system of being totally pro Laws of Divine Establishment and you must understand establishment before you can be PRO establishment.
 - iv. Many people don’t like the way hippies smell, their long hair or their attitude not do they like fagot homosexuals and their dress and manner and attitudes and they say they are pro establishment because Hippies and Fags are anti establishment.
 - v. The problem is they do not know what establishment actually contains and they do not understand Establishment principles in terms of:
 - a. Free Enterprise
 - b. Military
 - c. Law Enforcement
 - d. Law and authority balancing freedom
 - e. They could not be conservative if they wanted to.
 - vi. Conservatives used to be people who owned land because when you owned property you were thoughtful about losing and using it and everything related to it.
5. Conservatives made Rome great and roman patricians were some of the greatest people in history for pro establishment concepts.
 - i. When the 2nd Punic War started and drove all the landed people behind the walls of Rome you lost conservative Rome and there was only one conservative left and it was Gaius Julius Caesar.
 - ii. After the Punic Wars ended this man emerged as one of the most conservative people of all time.
 - iii. In modern history conservatives have been landed aristocracy, Peasantry, or Industrial Capitalist hierarchy.

- iv. The French Revolution destroyed Landed Aristocracy, Napoleon Wiped out Conservative Peasantry because they served in his armies and died by the thousands, Population shifts to large cities ALWAYS DESTROYS CONSERVATISM.
 - a. When people live on top of each other they start minding each other's business and one of the basic tenets of conservatism is that freedom means the right to PRIVACY.
- 6. There are false and true and partial interpretations of history.
- E. Each Generation of History is sustained by believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 1. The Super Grace believer is the spiritual atlas of his generation and is responsible for blessing and prosperity by association and great historical impact.
 - i. He is blessed by God and all associated with him are blessed as an overlap of his blessings.
 - 2. The Super Grace believer has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is provided incredible blessings in 5 categories by God:
 - i. Spiritual
 - ii. Temporal
 - iii. Association
 - iv. Impact
 - v. Dying
 - 3. Blessing by Association:
 - i. He marries a female and she is blessed by association with him.
 - ii. If they have children they are blessed as well.
 - iii. If they have pets (Dogs) they are blessed as well.
 - iv. If they have Neighbors they are blessed by association.
 - v. If he has a business the business and everyone hooked up with it are blessed by association.
 - vi. If he lives in a city the city is blessed by association
 - vii. The county which the city resides in is blessed also by association.
 - viii. The state which the county is in is blessed by association
 - ix. The nation which the state is part of is blessed by association.
 - x. The team or club he belongs to is also blessed.
 - xi. Friends are blessed by association.
 - xii. Anywhere you bring a Super Grace believer there is blessing by association.
 - 4. This carries into the concept that NO generation is ever blessed because of the wisdom of the parents or the grandparents or government or legislators
 - i. Every generation makes it own good or bad history.
 - ii. NO generation can blame their fore bearers and "Every Tub Stands on its Own Bottom" Grandma Thieme.
 - iii. Every generation must stand on its own and makes it's own history.
 - iv. As goes the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace so goes the generation and the believer in Super Grace is the SALT of the land.
- F. Super Grace depends on one category of the Human Race, Pastor Teachers
 - 1. There can be no Super Grace believers without Pastor Teachers teaching the word of God properly.
 - i. There are Too many Preachers and not enough TEACHERS.
 - 2. The Hub of History is the Pastor Teacher and with liberal Pastor Teachers there can be no believer who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 3. It all depends on those who teach Bible Doctrine on a daily basis.
 - 4. All God does is to provide enough for Positive Volition to be satisfied in any local and there are not too many proper Pastor Teachers.
 - 5. As goes the Super Grace believer so goes that generation of Human History BUT As goes the Pastor Teacher so goes the believer to Super Grace or NOT!

6. This is wheels within wheels.
 7. The Super Grace believer is the Wheel but the Pastor Teacher is the axle around which the wheel must turn.
 8. Therefore all the christian service organizations in the world are of no benefit to the generation in which they reside because they will not make you a believer who can reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 9. There is only one way to have Super Grace believers in any generation that being through the Pastor Teacher communicating to a group in a local church under strict academic discipline with them listening and he teaching.
 10. The wheel has to have spokes and these are what supports the Super Grace believer.
- III. The necessity of the Pastor Teacher teaching Bible Doctrine properly.
- A. You cannot ever derive happiness from your children and they cannot ever be the source of your happiness.
 1. To the extent you try to make them your happiness you are to that extent divorced from reality and in a category of Evil.
 2. You cannot make your children be your happiness and if you try to do this you have no happiness and have not grown up yet.
 - B. Happiness must be derived from contemporary situations and circumstances, as a believer Bible Doctrine and as an unbeliever Laws of Divine Establishment.
 1. When you have a loved one who dies you go right on living and you still will have Sharing the Happiness of God as a believer and will still weather the storm and keep moving in life.
 2. This is also true with children and when they fail you go right on and this changes nothing and you sill have Sharing the Happiness of God, Capacity for all aspects of Life, and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ When you have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - C. Because of the spiritual heritage of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul carrying the generation we are ready to understand about the Axle in the spiritual heritage principle, the person who must exist to communicate Bible Doctrine.
 1. In his generation Paul was the axle for all of his generation.
 - D. The whole book of 2nd Timothy is instructions to the next Super Grace believer who will lead other Super Grace believers in the next generation.
 1. Paul is passing the lead on to Timothy so that he can be an Axle in his generation.
 2. He must do for his generation what Paul did for his.
 3. Timothy in a sense has 2 types of spiritual heritage:
 - i. He will be a Super Grace believer and spiritual atlas holding up his generation like Paul did.
 - a. Paul was a communicator of Bible Doctrine an Apostle and his generation was the last to have an Apostle.
 - b. After Paul (John in reality but even during Paul's day) there were only Pastor Teachers no Apostles.
 - ii. Timothy is a Pastor Teacher and a Super Grace believer and there is a need in that generation for communicators of Bible Doctrine.
 4. Timothy must get back to his spiritual gift and study and teach consistently.
 5. Every generation historically depends on the ones who are communicators of Bible Doctrine for that generation.
 - i. Isaiah, Jeremiah, Abraham, Moses,
 - ii. It is very interesting to find a man communicating Bible Doctrine and at the same time making history and that was Moses.
 - iii. He made history by leading the people and at the same time communicated Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. Communicator of Bible Doctrine most often does not stand out in history but stays in the background of history.

- v. Paul stayed in the background as do all great Pastor Teachers but in the communication of Bible Doctrine the Pastor Teacher is responsible for the development of all Super Grace believers who in effect hold up that generation of history.
- 6. (gr) Charisma == Spiritual Gift
 - i. Today charisma means to have the ability to inspire people to do things where his communication inspired people to do things to the point of dying for him.
 - ii. The Biblical meaning is to be a communicator of Bible Doctrine which will cause a change in the life of others.
 - iii. This means that you cannot elect or stimulate or dedicate a person to be a Pastor Teacher he must have a spiritual gift from God.
 - iv. This should tell us that never was there a man who was a Pastor Teacher who earned or deserved nor worked for it.
 - v. There are no girls in the realm of Pastor Teacher and ONLY Male believers are given the spiritual gift by sovereign decision from God the Holy Spirit.
 - vi. The one who has the gift of Pastor Teacher is not better, cleaner, sweeter or nicer than anyone else.
 - vii. God takes all types of people and gives the gift of Pastor Teacher and the whole objective is to NOT change their personality as Pastor Teacher.
 - viii. This makes for phony hypocrite where you never say anything but nice things and do all sorts of nice things for people and say only stereotyped phrases for prayer and do and practice certain things.
 - ix. The fallacy here is that God never calls a man unless he is sweet and nice.
- 7. Our best chance for sinless perfection in life is to stick with our nasty irritating obnoxious right Pastor Teacher who teaches straight Bible Doctrine without any softening of the concepts.

Lesson #6 Series # 469 2Tim 1:6

- I. The source of spiritual heritage in the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - A. In 15 years 1 man did more to change modern history than anyone who ever has lived.
 - 1. Napoleon Bonaparte was a man of greatest genius
 - 2. He was not a Frenchman despite what many think and only at the end of his life did he speak french to any great extent.
 - 3. He was a Corsican and spoke great Italian and some English.
 - 4. He gathered around him his “marshals” a group of great men of the military.
 - 5. Fousche who was his chief of police
 - 6. Talleyrand who was his great diplomat.
 - 7. He summarized many of these men in 1 sentence.
 - B. Timothy’s Life:
 - 1. He was a Plodder
 - 2. He was a Failure TOTALLY falling into reversionism
 - 3. He then recovered and moved into Super Grace with his Super Grace blessings.
 - 4. He is commanded now in v6b to get his spiritual gift fired up again since he will carry his generation but it will take many others to carry their generations of the future.
 - C. Paul reminds Timothy of this dedication ceremony or “ordination” ceremony.
 - 1. Only Paul was involved in the laying on of hands and it only took 1 person to perform this ceremony of identification.
 - i. Paul was recognizing that Timothy had the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher but he identified himself with Timothy.
 - ii. When Paul laid hands on Timothy he did not know at that time that in a future time he would pass on the spiritual heritage responsibilities to Timothy.
 - iii. This would ensure that future generations would also have believers who reach Super Grace to carry the spiritual heritage on into history.

2. Paul also indicates the importance of the authority and function of the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher which had been neutralized by his reversionism and the fear therein.
 - i. The Pastor Teacher cannot ever be afraid of people or anyone for that matter and must be without fear in all conditions.
 - ii. Timothy was a wimp and coward and has pulled out of that status and cannot ever go back to it.
 - iii. Ministers are for the most part yellow wimpy cowardly people ever and fear everything and everyone and ran around trying to explain everything they did because someone was always trying to criticize their actions.
 - iv. The Pastor Teacher cannot fear anyone and must stand up to anyone and cannot fear horsey women who get pushy and cannot fear bullying men.
 - v. His only fear must be in the direction of the lord and that is Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

II. V7 is not directly to the believer in the congregation but to the Pastor Teacher only the one who will be the source of all Super Grace believers in any generation.

A. All Super Grace believers are like spokes in a wheel and the source of their spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is the faithful teaching of some Pastor Teacher.

1. This is the Pastor Teacher who keeps on studying and teaching without ceasing and just keeps on going.
2. There never was nor will be anyone reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God apart from some Pastor Teacher teaching Bible Doctrine properly.
3. This means NO christian organization can do a thing for spiritual growth of the believer.
4. In order to grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must find his own right Pastor Teacher and stay under his ministry.
5. No program of any denomination will cause spiritual growth but programs in the local church will always stifle the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
6. You cannot grow up spiritually without hearing and learning Bible Doctrine and this applies to everyone including the Pastor Teacher.
7. The Pastor Teacher must communicate Bible Doctrine day in and day out consistently.
8. People are either positive to Bible Doctrine or NOT and never ever should a believer under Positive Volition trade out with another person to hear their Pastor Teacher.
9. All you must do is find out who is your right Pastor Teacher and get under his ministry.
10. You can go years under the ministry of ONE Pastor Teacher and stay there and you don't have to read any books or do any other things.
11. The only thing you must do is LISTEN to your right Pastor Teacher and LEARN Bible Doctrine and this is the worst thing people do today.
12. God's sense of humor says that after efforts of all the groups in the world are done and all the tumult has died the only thing these legalists have done is go backward and the only way to go forward is to do nothing but LISTEN.
13. In reality you must get yourself to the place of listening, then concentrate without distraction, and then getting away from that place and then doing it over and over again every day.

B. Timothy is the great hope for carrying the spiritual heritage on to the next generation and beyond.

III. The last thing Paul will say to Timothy at the end of this Paragraph:

A. DON'T BE A COWARD.

1. Never be yellow again, never back down to a horsey woman or any bullying person nor to legalism of any kind.
2. Paul has told him, now Timothy being back in Super Grace you are going to have to watch your weakness and as a natural coward who feared everything in reversionism and was afraid of women and of bullying men and of people who legalistic set standards for you conduct in every aspect of you life, NEVER AGAIN.

3. Timothy had to back off from these people and teach Bible Doctrine and tell all of them To Hell With YOU!
 4. Timothy is to teach them and then go on and live his life and continue doing what he should be doing and NEVER FEAR Again.
- B. This v7 is only for the one who is the key to spiritual heritage in each generation and who MUST communicate Bible Doctrine without FEAR or concern for consequences.
1. Many preachers won't speak on certain subjects or use some types of vocabulary so they won't offend the "heavy givers" in the local church.
 2. The job of the Pastor Teacher is to NEVER cater to what anyone thinks he should do.
 3. As the Pastor Teacher you cannot be constantly watching what you do, think or say when teaching being careful to not offend someone, you have to teach Bible Doctrine as it is from scripture.
 4. Sooner or later Bible Doctrine will offend or bear down on each of us and we MUST NOT ever become one of these "offended" ones but take the corrections from doctrine and apply them to ourselves in privacy.
 5. There never is any excuse for not teaching the whole realm of Bible Doctrine except LAZINESS or COWARDICE.
 6. There are 3 great enemies of the Pastor Teacher:
 - i. Pride
 - ii. Laziness
 - iii. Cowardice.
- C. Cowardice is not the apprehension which occurs in any situation such as:
1. Before a battle
 2. Before you have to speak
 3. Before doing something you are not accustomed to doing
 4. The feeling in the pit of your stomach the butterflies in your gut.
- D. V7 tells the Pastor Teacher how to remain NORMAL in his life and function.
1. It starts out by indicating WHO is the BOSS for the Pastor Teacher:
 - i. Not the women, children, bullying men in the congregation.
 2. The BOSS is THE GOD the Father author of the plan and source of the pastors authority without which no Pastor Teacher could stay in the ministry.
 3. The only reason a pastor does not stay in the ministry is because of who and what God is.
 4. It is never because a Pastor Teacher makes mistakes or fails but is because of his relationship with God or lack thereof.
 5. This also applies to each one of us as well We cannot live on this earth one second more than the Will of God says for us to LIVE.
- E. Ho Theos == THE GOD
1. This is why and how we are here, how long we will stay here and when we are going to leave.
 2. Any blessing we have will be from him the source.
 3. Anything worthwhile in life is from him
 4. All of our life and functions in life goes back to who and what God is.
- F. The Pastor Teacher is responsible to and directly answerable to THE GOD for the function of his spiritual gift.
1. God knows all about every Pastor Teacher and has always known about him from Eternity Past.
 2. God reads minds and knows what Pastor Teachers think and understands their motivation and sees them all the time.
 3. A person can fool some people some of the time.
 - i. A boss may have some people working for him who have fooled him completely.
 - ii. HOWEVER When God is the boss he is never fooled at any time under any circumstance.
 4. Pastor Teachers must realize that they are responsible to God NOT EVER TO PEOPLE.

- i. If they understood this there would be more studying and teaching and less horsing around running out to see sick people and catering to people and waiting at the door to the church all of which are totally out of line and superfluous
 - ii. All the “Nice Things” that people think a Pastor Teacher must do are WRONG and he was doing his job as UNTO the people.
 - iii. He should have remembered that in the TOE of Christianity, he is responsible DIRECTLY TO GOD.
- G. The gift of Pastor Teacher DEMANDS Moral Courage above and beyond the normal integrity and courage of life.
 - 1. No Pastor Teacher can protect his congregation and be a coward.
 - 2. Cowardice and Arrogance go together and many people are MORAL cowards because of their arrogant pride and would rather be well thought of than RIGHT.
 - 3. This is how mediocrity became famous and Franklin Roosevelt made mediocrity famous.
 - i. He would have rather be well thought of than RIGHT.
 - 4. The arrogant pastor under pressure is a coward and the cowardly pastor MINUS pressure is ARROGANT.
 - 5. God has made no provision for Cowards in the Ministry as Pastor Teachers.
- H. Many people are not cowards because they are STUPID.
 - 1. These people being stupid and not cowards are NOT sensitive to those under his command.
 - 2. YOU must have lack of cowardice plus common sense intelligence knowing how others feel and you cannot be callous and indifferent or insensitive to the feelings and sensitivities of others.
 - 3. Occasionally you will have a case when you have to get tough with one but this should be very rare.
 - 4. To be stupid is to be dangerous and all this Bible Doctrine can be explosive when taken out of its proper setting.
 - 5. The Pastor Teacher cannot ever be a bully either therefore to balance these positions he must be smart as well.
 - 6. It is too easy for the stupid person to be unafraid but they are too dumb to be afraid.
 - 7. When you put pressure on a bully the cowardice shows.
- I. Until the man with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher gets his own church he has no authority and this is when he must have incredible moral courage to teach Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. Men with the gift of Pastor Teacher who do not get to a local church HAS NO AUTHORITY OVER ANYONE.
 - 2. The Pastor Teacher must be aware that people have feelings and must not TRY to hurt people in their areas of sensibility or overrule their free will.
 - 3. The Pastor Teacher must realize that if he does not recognize and all the use of the volition of his congregation he will be a bully.
 - 4. You as a Pastor Teacher never run around and tell people what they must do until they make the mistake of interfering with someone else’s life.
 - 5. Then the Pastor Teacher must step in and tear these people up and if necessary throw them out of the local church.
 - 6. The Pastor Teacher must do this because ever believer must be able to come to the local church and KNOW that their life and privacy are their own.
 - 7. Occasionally the bible and the doctrine will hit you but this does not mean the Pastor Teacher knows about the persons life or failures.
 - 8. You must be able to come into the local church with privacy and objectivity so that you can take anything taught as from the word of God and therefore benefit from it.
 - 9. YOU CANNOT BENEFIT FROM ANYTHING WHEN YOU REACT TO IT.
- J. The Pastor Teacher must be very alert to the freedom, rights and privacy of the individuals in the congregation and WHERE his authority exists and where it does not.
 - 1. This is extremely important for your own spiritual growth because we must be willing to take in and positive to Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher cannot MAKE you positive.

2. Even if it could be done it would be totally wrong and incompatible with the function of man in the Angelic Conflict.
 3. EACH HUMAN BEING MUST BE FREE TO WANT to take in Bible Doctrine by your own decision.
 4. The Pastor Teacher must protect the congregation from the bullies and legalists and gossips and at the same time avoid anything which might be coercion to anyone in the congregation.
 5. The Pastor Teacher must know where cowardice begins and ends with courage and where authority begins and ends in the local church.
 6. Being the Pastor Teacher in the local church is one of the MOST complicated jobs in life.
 7. A general is a general wherever he goes and this makes life very simple but NOT so with the Pastor Teacher who has more authority in his congregation even than the general in the military YET the use of that authority is anything but Simple.
 8. It involves restraint at times and great courage at times; one time a vigorous attack on someone and other times restraining from doing or saying anything.
- K. Timothy at Ephesus as a coward resulted the assembly of Ephesus rejecting his authority and therefore being totally in chaos.
1. The women ran over and bullied Timothy and became Gossips and trouble makers 1Tim 2
 2. Bullies began to take over in the congregation and the Shy Timothy became withdrawn, disillusioned, and disenchanted and MOVED into reversionism getting further and further away from reality and totally LOST control of the congregation.
 3. Paul here is reminding Timothy and ALL PASTORS that they must be free from arrogance and cowardice they being part and counter part.
 4. No man can function as a Pastor Teacher if he is arrogant because on the other end of this will be cowardice because of the level of authority the Pastor Teacher has from God in his congregation.
 5. The only avoidance is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 6. You never know a Pastor Teacher has cowardice until you put pressure on his arrogance.
 7. As a pastor when you do something wrong you are wrong and must never become arrogant about yourself and NEVER be cowardly.
- L. One of the greatest problems with men in the ministry is ARROGANCE as in most of life.
1. It does not take much for a person to become arrogant and the only protection one has from arrogance is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. Many men in the ministry are highly critical about people and situations out of SHEAR JEALOUSY.
 3. Putting pressure on a Pastor Teacher's arrogance will push it down and up comes his Cowardice and Jealousy.
- M. The primary reason for the Pastor Teacher having so much authority is Bible Doctrine
1. He must learn Bible Doctrine and teach Bible Doctrine without compromise EVER.
 2. A man in the pastorate must be a man of Bible Doctrine.
- N. Power plus Love = Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul plus Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
1. This is the balance of residence in the soul of Filling of God the Holy Spirit + maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 2. This is the NORMAL Super Grace life also experiential sanctification which comes ONLY through great self discipline.
 3. The greater the self discipline the less likely there will be arrogance.
 4. Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul comes from great self discipline called here "soundness of mind".

- O. Self Discipline is one of the virtues of the Christian Way of Life lost in the former translations of the bible from Greek.
1. Self discipline is the key to many things in life it is unbelievable that we could miss it.
 2. Self Discipline is PLUGGING knowing you are doing the right thing and then keeping on doing it.
 3. It is giving equal concentration to all subjects at all times
 4. It is putting first things first and the Pastor Teacher therefore must understand he must study and prepare before he can teach.
 5. Studying and teaching is what the Pastor Teacher must build his whole life around and this requires self discipline.

2Tim 1:6

v6: Because of which cause, the spiritual heritage principle in history where every generation depends on, draws on, is blessed by its own spiritual heritage of Super Grace believers or LACK of them, for which reason, I continue to remind you, Timothy, that you fire up your life again and again or revive or rekindle the doctrinal communication gift of Pastor Teacher, from the source of God that is within you through the laying on of my hands;

2Tim 1:7

v7: For THE God has, to our advantage, dogmatically, absolutely not given to us, as Pastor Teachers who have a local church, the life or state of mind of cowardice (Timothy having been a coward), but of inherent inner power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and reciprocal or virtue love for God, Impersonal Love and a Relaxed Mental Attitude for Mankind (Rom 5:5, Gal 5:22), and the sound mentality of wisdom and of self control and self discipline.

Lesson #7 Series # 469 2Tim 1:7

- I. Self Discipline Continued:
- A. This is most likely the most underrated thing in life.
 1. Ability to carry self discipline into every facet of life is most important.
 2. The people who enjoy life the most, have the most fun in life, have the greatest capacity for life and for love are the people who have the best discipline and are beneficiaries of their own self discipline.
 - B. One of the greatest virtues and highest honor in Christianity is related to self discipline.
 1. No one ever reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or has capacity for life apart from self discipline.
 2. This is one of the most important subject in this area.
 - C. 7 Principles of Self Discipline:
 1. One of **the most difficult of all transitions** for anyone to make even in wartime is to go from being civilian to being a military man.
 - i. In our nation there is such a great emphasis on freedom and responsibility that these become ingrained characteristics which represent American individuality and therefore it is rather difficult for some to make the transition from FREEDOM to TOTAL lack of freedom which is what the beginning of military life is.
 - ii. One of the great unusual principles of history is that the freedom which we all enjoy is based on surrender of freedom in the function of the military in producing that freedom.
 - iii. The individual in our nation must leave the peacetime pursuit related to freedom and move into military life and this requires 2 things which go together.
 - a. Flexibility which leads to GREAT SELF DISCIPLINE
 - iv. You start life free and have a certain amount of freedom related to the Laws of Divine Establishment compatible with the principle of authority.
 - v. You must go from freedom of civilian life to self discipline in military life.
 - vi. This transition can only be made through flexibility in the individual and response to authority.
 - vii. This is also why there should be universal military training in the United States of America at all times since a FREE person who goes through military training

- always emerges with the Self Discipline that will serve him in all areas of his life and in all his endeavors.
- viii. This self discipline is so great because you are often under the authority of Weirdos and coo coo's who are often dumber than you are but **HAVE THE AUTHORITY.**
 - ix. To keep your mouth shut and be able to take this discipline is one of the best things in life.
 - x. When people fail in the military and sound off or have the excuse that they were smarter than their commanding officer or NCO and he was wrong and I was right then those people never make it in life and are bad in everything they do.
 - xi. They are bad companions, business men, lovers and are unreliable and unstable.
 - xii. What makes life so great is self discipline and when a person of his own free will without anything dangling before him called opportunity or money and moves into the military and uses his flexibility to place himself under authority and develops self discipline this is the exactly the perfect reflection of what Bible Doctrine does for all believers.
 - xiii. The Pastor Teacher is often totally inferior to the members of the congregation and therefore **YOU LEARN BIBLE DOCTRINE** from such a person.
 - xiv. It does not make any difference as to what you think you are in life because when you start in bible study on your own or in the local church, after rebound, **YOU ARE NOTHING** and are simply there to learn.
 - xv. If you persist in carrying away from bible study a piece of what the pastor has studied and presented then eventually **YOU WILL BECOME A SUPER GRACE BELIEVER.**
 - xvi. It starts by being free to go to bible study in the local church, and you have flexibility in your arrival process, and when you sit in the local church before your Pastor Teacher you are nothing and he is your maximum authority.
 - xvii. Some times people resent or react to what is taught and put strongly to them and as a result delay or prevent their momentum carrying them to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - xviii. This is caused by totally by lack of self discipline and this person does not have enough self discipline to recognize the authority of the Pastor Teacher and **SHUT UP** and focus and concentrate on the message.
 - xix. You leave freedom at home when you join the military and the result is being **NOT FREE** any longer and you are told to do many things which you don't like by someone you cannot stand.
 - xx. You do it despite this and develop because of it **SELF DISCIPLINE.**
 - xxi. When you buck your authority in the military by sounding off or resisting authority this will come back to haunt you for the rest of your life because **YOU HAVE FAILED TO DEVELOP SELF DISCIPLINE.**
 - xxii. This is because you failed to take advantage of the greatest opportunity in life which will prevent you from having capacity for life which is **ONLY** able to be developed from proper function of self discipline under authority **AND** maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - xxiii. The only way the unbeliever can get capacity for life is through self discipline.
2. When you leave your freedom behind as you often must do in life you do so because of your **FLEXIBILITY.**
- i. When you get into your car to drive you surrender some of your freedom under your flexibility recognizing the authority of the traffic controls and laws which keep you safe in driving.
 - ii. There are things you do in life which are legitimate things and in order to do these things you must surrender some of your freedom because of your flexibility in life.
 - iii. Flexibility is a characteristic which makes American discipline possible:

- a. On the job being under discipline of principles and policies.
 - b. You are flexible enough to do this so that you come out with self discipline and great capacity for life.
 - iv. Women when they marry a man were free to do this but when they do they immediately come under his authority.
 - a. Many do not make it because they lack flexibility and no male is perfect but not all are totally bad either.
 - b. No matter his problems or failures the woman who is his wife is still under his authority.
 - c. If the woman is flexible enough to come under a man's authority even being smarter than the male and better in many ways than he, she will derive great self discipline which will result in great capacity for life.
 - d. The difference can easily be seen between a horsey woman and magnificent lady based on how they respond to the authority of their husband.
 - e. If they put themselves under his authority they must have self discipline to do it they will then come out of it with great capacity for life.
 - v. Whether a person enters military or ladies get married the person comes under a system of authority and must be flexible enough to stay under it to develop self discipline which produces capacity for life.
 - a. Self Discipline is the key to all of life and we study Bible Doctrine and gain self discipline because we have put ourselves under the authority of our Pastor Teacher to learn Bible Doctrine and this allows us to grow up in the Spiritual Life.
 - b. This self discipline of Bible Doctrine studies will compensate for our failures in other areas of life.
- 3. 3 ways to develop capacity for life:
 - i. *Self Discipline from military training for Males*
 - a. This system always has a maximum number of people who are stupid, dumber than the recruit, inferior to us, and this develops self discipline.
 - ii. *Self Discipline developed for the female through marriage.*
 - iii. *Self Discipline related to the Grace Apparatus for Perception for believers.*
 - iv. (ff) Self discipline related to proper function under higher education.
 - v. There can also be developed self discipline by function in:
 - a. Athletics especially with a tough coach.
 - b. In the military the Drill Instructors go out of their way to cause you to HATE them in order that you learn self discipline.
 - c. Husbands don't try but often succeed in this realm also.
 - d. Pastors should also function at this level.
 - vi. Function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is DIRECTLY related to the Spiritual Life but the military and marriage are indirectly related to the Spiritual Life because of function under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - vii. Women often do not realize that the only way to develop capacity for life for them is to put themselves under the authority of their husbands in marriage.
 - viii. When a person lacks capacity for life and does not enjoy much in life it is often a result of trying to find someone else to blame their predicament on and the more they try to blame others for this the further they move away from capacity for life.
 - ix. If this goes on long enough in their life they will become psychotic and totally divorced from reality and never will blame self for anything or see self in the true light of a proper perspective and as a result will become neurotic and psychotic.
 - x. IT IS DISCIPLINE WHICH BRINGS YOU BACK TO REALITY.
 - xi. Ministers fail to recognize this but should be just as tough as a drill instructors in order to force you to develop self discipline and thereby capacity for life.
- 4. There are 2 kinds of discipline; Self and Group

- i. Self Discipline:
 - a. Once you get into one of the areas where self discipline is developed and you pass then you are eligible to do a number of things:
 - b. You can then go out into society and have a good social, sexual, business, professional life.
 - i) The best in any area of life have gone through this and have capacity for these things.
 - c. When you come out of the military functioning properly in there and out of bible study at the local church or out of the home in marriage, you have freedom but now it is with self discipline and flexibility and THIS IS CAPACITY FOR LIFE.
 - d. Then whatever kind of life appeals to you then you can enjoy it based on your own self discipline.
 - ii. Group Discipline:
 - a. Self discipline leads to Group Discipline.
 - b. Many times when a person gets into a group of any kind they are not happy with the other people there nor the leadership nor the policies of the group.
 - c. It is the flexibility which allows you to be under the authority in the key training area produces capacity for life which is self discipline and makes you a candidate for group discipline.
5. Illustration of Self Discipline:
- i. Boxing once he gets into a ring he depends on his own self discipline
 - ii. In the process of preparing for boxing he must condition his body in many different areas and restrict many of his daily functions in order to maintain proper physical training.
 - iii. In the ring when he is fighting this self discipline pays off.
 - iv. At times outside the ring and after training he may feel like stepping out of line occasionally but self discipline keeps him in line.
6. Illustration of Group Discipline:
- i. This is TEAMWORK and in team athletics or military functions every member has a job to do and his self discipline brings him to the place where he can work with the group.
 - a. This is the same in a factory operation, or business or any other professional function.
 - ii. In the local church the individuals self discipline contributes to group discipline during bible study.
7. Therefore ONE type of these merges into the other.
- D. How these work in history:
1. The story of the development of Germany by the Hohenzollern family buying the area of Brandenburg.
 - i. The drafting of the Army and setting up of the strongest system of discipline in the world by Frederick William.
 - ii. He needed a strong middle class and he lacked a middle class except in the area of farming.
 - iii. At this time Louis XIV revoked the Edict of Nance and started persecution of the Huguenots or Protestant Believers so Frederick William opened his country and invited them to move into his area and established by this means of these Huguenots a great middle class with a GREAT Spiritual heritage.
 - iv. He saw also a country called Prussia where the Teutonic Knights had moved in and conquered the Wild Lithuanian Slavic Peasant people and thus they stayed and called the nation Prussia after the name of one of the Tribes they had conquered.

- v. The Head of these Knights was a Cousin Hohenzollern and when he died without Heir he willed it over to Frederick William so that it became Brandenburg Prussia.
- vi. He was developing everything along the lines of self discipline.
- vii. When he died he turned it all over to his son, Frederick William II who then asked the Ruler of the Holy Roman Empire if he could become a King and the ruler said NO.
- viii. So Frederick William II simply declared Prussia to NOT be part of the Holy Roman Empire and therefore he called himself the King of Prussia rather than the king of Brandenburg and therefore became the King of Brandenburg Prussia.
- ix. Then he became Frederick 1st and He had a son Frederick William 1st and he put it all together being one of the toughest disciplinarians of all time.
- x. He treated treated his son Frederic and Willamina his daughter with the toughest brutality and discipline.
- xi. Frederic loved to play the Flute or Violin (both stated in different lessons) and his father kept breaking these over his head and in order to show his father he decided to NOT speak German but only French and became very eloquent in that language.
- xii. He (later lessons) tried to run away to France and his father caught him and his assistant and killed his helper and drafted him into the army so he would have to learn to speak German and learn some discipline.
- xiii. The result was the Little Fritz took the whole system of discipline and put it all together.
- xiv. When his father died he left him a great deal of money and he did it by taking all the gold and silver and melting it down and turning it into gold and silver coins and with this he bought a special regiment the Potsdam Guard where in order to get into it you had to be at least 7' tall and he went all over Europe looking for extremely tall men to put into this guard.
- xv. He therefore died and left to his son Little Fritz a nation in perfect condition with:
 - a. A spiritual heritage of Bible Doctrine and there were more super grace believers in Brandenburg than in the rest of the whole world together.
 - b. A strong middle class
 - c. The greatest self discipline because everyone served in the military at some time.
- xvi. Because of this great situation Frederick the Great as he became know decided to expand again (better story in other lessons) into Silesia and he walked right into that area and took it and this started the 7 years war the first World War in history.
 - a. This war was fought in India and how the British took India
 - b. It was fought in the United States of America which was simply North America and was why we became Anglo Saxon in culture rather than Latin and Catholic.
 - c. It was fought in Asia and Europe as well.
- xvii. In Europe was where the Payoff occurred and Frederick the Great with a small army of never more than 30,000 always defeated his enemies who always outnumbered him at least 3 to 1.
 - a. The French at Rossbach with 60,000 french defeated
 - b. The Austrians were defeated at Luthen with 90,000 defeated
 - c. The Russians were defeated at Zorndorf outside Berlin with 50,000 Russian defeated and never to return.
 - d. This went on for 7 years and during that time he won consistently and demonstrated that self discipline could and did change Europe for all of history after that.
 - e. He took more and more area and became the dominant leader in Europe at that time and during the Franco Prussian War of 1870 united all of central

Europe into one country Germany which came into existence only in 1870.

- f. Germany therefore upset the balance of Power and 3 great wars were fought to solve it but none ever did.
 - i) Franco Prussian War
 - ii) WWI
 - iii) WWII

xviii. The PRINCIPLE IS that self discipline changed the whole course of history and it always does and will do.

- a. When self discipline merges with group discipline as in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception it can change any generation at any time.
- b. It is the only way to get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the only way to stay away from reversionism.
- c. It will protect you from evil and is the key which can only be exercised under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

II. The Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ: v8-11 Not being Ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

- A. You are free to come to bible class in the local church but when you do you surrender some freedom at the door coming under the authority of the Pastor Teacher.
 - 1. You have the flexibility to handle that problem so that doing this consistently you develop great self discipline and this takes you eventually to the Super Grace Status Quo and tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict.
 - 2. Self Discipline merges into the group discipline of the local church results in another factor of NOT BEING ASHAMED OF CHRIST.
- B. We must question ourselves “are you ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ”
 - 1. In the local church – Definitely NOT
 - 2. On the outside of the local church when you try to impress others with your Christ and they are not impressed are you then ashamed.
 - 3. In restaurants you must ask for God the Holy Spirit to sanctify the food.
 - 4. We must never be ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who saved us, the only one who can bless us, the one who controls history, the one who has battlefield royalty which has caused us to be royalty forever and NEVER are we to be ashamed of our royalty position in Christ.
- C. Paul is not ashamed of Timothy who has recovered from his reversionism.
 - 1. Paul is NOT ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because he has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Ultra Super Grace.
 - 2. He has had a wonderful life and wonderful death.
- D. No Super Grace believer when contemplating Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his memory, is to NOT be ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 1. He, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who came in Hypostatic Union to this earth, who died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for our sin, who was resurrected and ascended to sit at the Right Hand of God the Father and to receive his battlefield royalty and therefore extend to us through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit our own Status Quo of Royal Family of God.
 - 2. People are often ashamed of their parents or children or vice versa and therefore don't want to be around these people.
 - 3. There is always the potential of being ashamed of an object in life but with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is NO POTENTIAL for being ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 4. Paul is not ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because in his soul he has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

5. In the Angelic Conflict it is a natural thing to be ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ if you lack Bible Doctrine and Timothy a short time before this book was ashamed of Christ being in reversionism himself.
 6. Because Timothy is now out of reversionism and again a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, and all Super Grace believers are spiritual atlas's who carry their generation in history and Timothy is a 3rd generation believer he must NEVER AGAIN be ashamed of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under Category I Love and not of Paul Category III Love.
 7. Timothy is never to be ashamed of the Evidence of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ie Bible Doctrine.
 8. Paul is telling Timothy to never neglect Bible Doctrine again and get back into reversionism and become ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 9. When one neglects the EVIDENCE of Christ in Bible Doctrine being taught they you become ashamed and move into reversionism.
 10. Timothy is to refrain from any future apostasy because he has a job to do being back in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and he is to hold up his generation and be a spiritual atlas following in the footsteps of his mother and grandmother who held up history in their generations.
- E. Timothy's test is whether he will stay in Super Grace or NOT.
1. Would he hold up his generation in history or NOT.
 2. His attitude toward Paul in the Mamertine dungeon is what determines his stability with regard to his Super Grace Status Quo.
 3. In our generation today the same thing applies so that if you neglect Bible Doctrine you are therefore ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 4. There are all kinds of ways to express Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and they all reflect being ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and reflect also spiritual weakness and failure to be part of the pivot of Super Grace believers which will hold up the generation they are in.
- F. The question for Timothy is what is his attitude toward Paul who has been severely criticized and ostracized by roman society.
1. Pseudo love would shy away from Paul where roman believers were accused and criticized for being ashamed of Paul in chains.
 2. Paul is very controversial at this time and therefore a perfect test for Timothy.
 3. Paul is Persona Non Grata in the roman empire and pseudo friends under the influence of evil would certainly reject him and desert him and therefore Paul is ALONE in the Dungeon.
 4. Timothy's reversionism has robbed him of Love and now that he has recovered he will have a test and the principle is that NO ONE EVER TAKES A STEP FORWARD WITHOUT THE STEP BEING CHALLENGED.
 5. NO ONE EVERY MAKES THE RIGHT MOVE FOR JESUS CHRIST WITHOUT HAVING THAT MOVE CHALLENGED.
 6. Deciding to take advantage of Bible Doctrine teaching daily will immediately be challenged and many things will occur to deter or distract you from being persistent in this effort.
 7. The test could be minor or extreme and you could have your family become ill or lose your business or whatever is between and you MUST retain your conviction to persist in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 8. No one ever takes a step forward without having the step challenged.
- G. If you are as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace, hold up the world in your generation you will suffer from the world.
1. The world throws at you the worst pressure called EVIL.
 2. Paul is pressurized by evil and Timothy will be pressurized by Evil

3. If you advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and hold this Status Quo moving to Ultra Super Grace you will FACE EVIL and be under the pressure of evil.
 4. EVIL is the great enemy of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 5. Evil is not only opposed to the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but any manifestation of Grace.
 6. The Greatest historical manifestation of Grace is the Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and one's attitude toward the gospel is one's attitude toward the Grace of God.
 7. Satan and all fallen angels and all unbelievers all have an attitude toward the gospel which represents some facet of evil.
- H. God in his GRACE PLAN offers to everyone something FREE which has not price and requires no payment of any kind, no efforts on our part.
1. The gospel is a manifestation of the PERFECT POWER of God.
 2. Satan in his arrogance is opposed to such genius and EVIL is the accumulation of satanic arrogance and is in angels and man which rejects the gospel that which God has provided free.
 3. Since the Gospel is Doctrine it will be opposed by Evil.
- I. The gospel is a manifestation of the perfect power of God NOT something as mundane as miracles.
1. It is free from any efforts from human beings in any way.
 2. You cannot do anything for salvation and for acceptance of the grace provision of the gospel and to do this you must be Unashamed of doing nothing.
 3. You must be clear from any Attacks of evil on, the gospel, Christian Way of Life, the Grace Apparatus for Perception, the Laws of Divine Establishment and everything.
 4. One of the greatest attacks of EVIL is Religion and one of the GREATEST weapons of Religion is Legalism.
 5. Legalism uses the gospel but ADD to it EVIL by having you do anything at all for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or spirituality is an attack of evil.
 6. You have to be very careful because the pressure of evil brings suffering to those who take a stand for GRACE.

2Tim 1:8

v8: Therefore, Timothy and all other believers, do not be ashamed as believer or Pastor Teacher of giving spoken evidence in witnessing, testifying, giving deposition in the court of the local church, with reference to our Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, in teaching Bible Doctrine, nor of me, Paul, his prisoner, but now begin to join with me in suffering evil with reference to the gospel according to the perfect inherent omnipotent power of The God,

Lesson #8 Series # 469 2Tim 1:9

- I. Louis XIV was one of the most arrogant stupid individuals in history
- A. He started ruling as a child and ruled for 50 years and in his great arrogance he was carried away with the idea of persecuting the Valdencians who were the greatest group of Super Grace believers in Europe.
1. John Calvin was french and was a brilliant theologian and the greatest center of Calvinists in the world was at that time located in FRANCE itself and the estimate is that there were over 1,000,000 in France who had a total population of only 19,000,000.
 2. They were the backbone of the prosperity France enjoyed through the reign of Louis XIV.
- B. He eventually went against these people and revoked the Edict of Nance and thereby destroyed his own nation and totally impoverished it and died a miserable disappointed person.
1. He failed to recognize the principle that when he destroyed the freedom of those who were under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and set up a system of persecution of them that he had neutralized the entire french army.
 2. The french are a strange mixture of Gallic and Germanic and make fantastic soldiers and Louis had some of the finest armies ever to exist and the greatest marshals and soldiers of all time.
 3. He neutralized this in turning against those who were the Salt of the Land the Calvinists.

- C. These Calvinists became known as Huguenots in France.
 1. When he started persecuting these people he guaranteed that his armies would be defeated in the fields of battle.
 2. Over a period of wars including Spanish Succession France lost out in the military way and therefore they lost in every way.
 - D. Bible Doctrine is very clear on the principle that ALL FREEDOM comes through military victory.
 1. Our freedoms today are from those who have served so very well in our military history and the battlefield determines the freedom of the nation.
 2. In times of freedom it is the nation itself which learns from the military.
 3. All freedom which comes from military victory also becomes the basis for capacity for life outside the military.
 - E. One enters the military based on his flexibility and this puts him under authority.
 1. This is the same thing which occurs in the assembly of the local church and the structure of authority and the discipline therein.
 2. This results in self discipline producing capacity for life and the only ways into this system are consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine OR military service.
 3. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment it is the military which provides the freedom so that believers can be under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and thereby go to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 4. Under this discipline function they develop great capacity for life.
 5. In the military this occurs and when the man exits the military he has great self discipline and capacity for life.
 6. This is why we NEED UNIVERSAL MILITARY TRAINING.
 - F. It is the uniform of the military services which are the symbols of freedom.
 1. Therefore considering the men in the congregation who are in military service they have used their flexibility to place themselves under military authority and discipline as well as spiritual authority and discipline therefore giving themselves great self discipline and incredible capacity for life.
- II. Freedom through Military Victory:
- A. Col William H. Wilber, 13 Jan 1943 North Africa
 1. He demonstrated coolness from self discipline and incredible flexibility going outside his orders and saved many thousands of American lives.
 - B. Corp Edward G. Wilkins, C Company, 157th Infantry, 45th Infantry Division, from Vermont, Siegfried Germany, Individually and personally penetrated the Siegfried Line.
- III. We as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are part of another conflict the spiritual conflict called the Angelic Conflict.
- A. At the moment we became believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we entered this conflict and continue to fight within it with our primary weapon being Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - B. Timothy having failed and recovered now understands that History records that it is held up by the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 1. No generation can survive without military victory which produced freedom.
 2. No generation can survive without believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who are the basis of carrying every generation in history.
 - C. It is wonderful to know as a believer that we have secure Eternal Life and that our life has purpose and meaning in this life.
 1. Self discipline is the bridge in the believer by which under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine he moves into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and its prosperity and blessing.
 2. In order to get this concept into Timothy, Paul moves back to the basic principle of the Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which MUST be understood.

3. The more you understand of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the more you understand the Plan of God and are in it and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace.
- D. We have all made the decisions needed for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and are alive with temporal life and having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we also have Eternal Life so the question is “WHY ARE WE HERE”.
1. Why does God keep us here in this life and why have we NOT been taken home to be face to face with God after salvation.
 2. The Answer is simply that GOD HAS A PLAN FOR OUR LIFE IN TIME.
 3. We are alive because we are part of the greatest conflict of the ages the Angelic Conflict and in the appeal trial phase of it.
 4. This is a great spiritual conflict in which all the forces of Satan are arrayed against you and in which the greatest creature of the creation of God is Against us and has developed GREAT resources and power combating us.
 5. Our objective is to demonstrate that through our own FREE WILL OBJECTIVE we can place ourselves under the authority of our own right Pastor Teacher and with great flexibility we can assimilate the word of God, Bible Doctrine.
 6. This is the epitome of self discipline and with this great self discipline we are able to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God on a daily basis today, tomorrow and the next day taking in Bible Doctrine.
 7. Occasionally we need encouragement and we can get it NOT by hearing the gospel repeated as we are already saved and cannot be saved again.
- E. Many churches do the same thing every time they are in session and that is preaching the gospel over and over.
1. It is impossible to grow up in the Spiritual Life by just hearing the gospel ONLY.
 2. It does not take much gospel hearing to attain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God so hearing it over and over again is useless in the Spiritual Life.
 3. We are saved by grace not by any efforts of our own but this can only occur one time.
- F. Timothy has gone through many stages of grace and still is alive and functioning.
1. Saving Grace – Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 2. Living Grace or Logistical Grace – whereby everything is provided for EVERY believer to give them the potential to use their volition and self discipline to take in Bible Doctrine and advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. Also under this function of Logistical Grace if you don’t care to indulge in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine then God in his grace keeps you alive to provide incredible Divine Discipline to redirect you to the Plan of God and Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. The concept is that you must be alive to appreciate Divine Discipline from God.
 - iii. You are in this Status Quo kept alive for 1 of 2 reasons, to use your Positive Volition to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or to allow you to experience the stages of Divine Discipline associated with reversionism giving you in fact the OPPORTUNITY to change your direction and return to the Plan of God and Bible Doctrine.
 3. Super Grace and / or Ultra Super Grace – The people who function under Positive Volition advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and receive their Super Grace blessing package for time and they carry their generation historically while the believers who reject Bible Doctrine or neglect it and enter reversionism are take from this life eventually by the Sin Unto Death.
 4. Dying Grace – is for the believer who has reached and held the position of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and is his most incredible EXIT from this temporal life to be face to face with God.
 5. Surpassing Grace – the blessings and decorations for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

- 6. There will be fantastic differences in eternity with regard to categories of Status Quo of believers based on their level of spiritual advance from their use of grace.
- G. Whether a person or group is prospered in life is based on whether or not they have continued to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
- IV. The Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - A. We are not saved because we are NICER or SMARTER or LESS INHIBITED than others.
 - 1. We are certainly not saved from giving money, being baptized or gotten into some church system of points for salvation and spirituality.
 - B. The principle of salvation is GRACE, the principle after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is GRACE and the Principle of our life after death is GRACE.
 - 1. We are to GROW in grace in our Spiritual Life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - C. Who or What is the Super Grace believer **James 4:6**

James 4:6

v6: Moreover He, God, gives to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Greater Grace or super-grace, therefore it, the Old Testament Scripture, says in Proverbs 3:34 "The God makes War against the Arrogant Believer, But he gives Grace to the Humble Believer".

- 1. God gives to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God GREATER GRACE and since grace is an absolute the only thing greater than GRACE is Super Grace.
- D. What is super Grace?
 - 1. We know that at the point of our faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone we are given Salvation Grace and 39 irrevocable assets for our Spiritual Life in time and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
 - 2. We know that after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are given Living or Logistical Grace whereby we are kept alive in time certainly not deserving it in order to allow us opportunity to advance in the Spiritual Life through the Grace Apparatus for Perception to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 3. The objective of keeping us alive is therefore simply to allow us the opportunity to reach Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and receive from God incredible GRACE blessings for time and later for eternity all which Glorify God.
 - 4. The purpose of 2nd Timothy is to explain this and direct Timothy and all believers through time to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 5. God cannot be glorified by anything which we do but when he can provide incredible blessings in 5 categories to the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Status Quo Super Grace.
 - 6. These blessing are designed and set totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere system and this provides the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.
- E. We have been saved and are still alive and being alive we have a HOLY CALLING.
 - 1. As we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we become open to the purpose and Plan of God.
 - 2. We each as believers have a holy calling, we are saints set apart to God and part of the Royal Family of God and we always will be in this Status Quo and it is a result of at one time in our life we responded to grace in 1 second we personally expressed our faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - 3. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive from God 39 irrevocable assets which we will have forever and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
 - 4. God cannot ever take back what he has given and in Eternity Past he made a sovereign decision to provide these 39 assets for every believer and at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he does for all of us and being Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice it is no compromise for God to give these things.

5. God is also Perfect Love and it is compatible for him to give these things in our salvation package which is IRREVOCABLE.
 6. No matter our failure or success with regard to sin, Human Good or Evil we cannot lose what God has given us that being Eternal Life and the other 38 assets which we will always have for all eternity.
 7. There is no way any believer can ever lose salvation given by God since we did nothing to get it in the first place and if you think there is something which you can do to lose your salvation GIVEN BY SOVEREIGN DECISION OF GOD, you are the most arrogant human being alive.
 8. The believer who does not FEEL saved after a failure is based on physiology and Mental Attitude and after a failure the believer receives Divine Discipline from God and that does not FEEL GOOD.
 9. Feeling good or bad or neutral does not contribute to our salvation and how we may feel does not count but it is only who and what God is since it all depends on God ALONE.
 10. God the Father planned salvation, God the Son executed salvation on the cross and God the Holy Spirit revealed it therefore nothing ever has nor ever will depend on US.
 11. Once you believe in Christ remember there is NO WAY you can cancel it because it did not depend on you.
 12. God's character is all that matters, his sovereignty, justice, righteousness, love is what provides salvation.
 13. Our eternal salvation means we will live with God forever therefore we must also have Eternal Life.
 14. Because of his Omniscience God knew from Eternity Past that we would become believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and therefore he set up a package of grace plan benefits and blessings in Eternity Past and therefore there is no way to FOOL God.
 15. Being omnipotent, God has the ability to take care of each of us without any strain on his abilities or resources in time as well as for all eternity.
 16. He being omnipresent is keeping an eye on each of us and when we go to him in prayer because of some situation or problem we see in our lives he chuckles and says to us I see the problem now and have known it would happen from Eternity Past and have provided what is needed for a solution way back then.
 17. People change in every way possible to change but God never changes, we may fail or succeed or even renounce God after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but nothing we do can change anything with regard to our salvation.
 18. Once God has given you Eternal Life he cannot change it.
 19. God is VERACITY which is absolute truth and we call this converted into print "BIBLE DOCTRINE" and it is our objective to assimilate as much of this as possible building into our soul to accompany and balance the Righteousness of God given at salvation, JUSTICE.
 20. God has a perfect sense of humor and this is why we are all here.
 21. Salvation and Spirituality are basically under the same principle and there is NOTHING we can do to advance either in our life.
 22. Salvation is the work of God the Son based on his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
 23. Spirituality is the work of God the Holy Spirit controlling our soul and providing the means of our learning Bible Doctrine through the Grace Apparatus for Perception and being our MENTOR.
 - i. Anything Man can do has nothing to do with spirituality.
 24. *In salvation there is a very simple principle, God Planned and Said it, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did it and I believe it and that is all there is to it.*
- F. All believers are saved and all are called but in this context Paul and Timothy are both in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace therefore this verse is referring to a certain kind of believer the one who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.

1. All Grace Orientation begins at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and no one ever reaches Super Grace without a thorough understanding of Sotieriology
2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ saved us in a moment of time when we expressed faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
3. In this moment he provided for us salvation with 39 assets and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
4. In addition he called us having known in Eternity Past we would believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ therefore provided for our salvation.

V. 3 principles of Salvation:

- A. The saving work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross went in 3 directions:
 1. Toward God
 2. Toward Man
 3. Toward Sin.
- B. Redemption, Reconciliation, Propitiation the 3 directional principles of Sotieriology.
 1. Each of these goes in a different direction and summarizes part of the work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- C. Redemption is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross directed toward Sin.
 1. This means to purchase from a slave market and then manumit or free them.
 2. A person shackled in a slave market with ONLY slaves there and someone comes along and purchases his freedom.
 3. We in the Human Race are born with an Old Sin Nature and we are not sinners because we sin which is a result of our Old Sin Nature functioning.
 4. We are born in the slave market of Sin being with an Old Sin Nature which we have acquired genetically from our original parents Adam and Ishah who first transgressed the Plan of God and orders of God in the garden.
 5. In addition to being born with the Old Sin Nature we receive from God the responsibility for Adam's Original Sin having his genetically passed down Old Sin Nature, we in fact receive the imputation of Adam's Original Sin at physical birth imputed to our Old Sin Nature.
 6. The Old Sin Nature is composed of:
 - i. Area of weakness producing Sin in 3 categories
 - a. Mental
 - b. Verbal
 - c. Overt
 - ii. Area of strength producing Human Good
 - iii. Lust Pattern where there is origin for:
 - a. Power
 - b. Approbation
 - c. Materialism
 - iv. Trends which vary in different stages of life toward:
 - a. Asceticism
 - b. Lasciviousness
 7. The problem is we are all born with this Old Sin Nature and therefore born into the slave market of SIN.
 - i. Every person was born with an Old Sin Nature except Adam and Ishah who were not born in the first place but entered the slave market of sin of their own free will.
 8. Every human being after the fall of Adam was born spiritually dead with an Old Sin Nature including EVERY religious founder and leader.
 - i. All religious leaders have an Old Sin Nature and if they die without being helped out of the slave market of sin they then will reside in Hell with Satan for all eternity.

- ii. NO ONE WITH AN Old Sin Nature CAN HELP ANYONE ELSE GET OUT OF THE SLAVE MARKET OF SIN AND AVOID THE LAKE OF FIRE.
- 9. The only way to get out of the slave market of sin is for someone who is free to buy our freedom.
 - i. The only person who has been born without an Old Sin Nature is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ being born from a virgin female without the genetic material from a human father which brings to the fetus the corruption of the Old Sin Nature.
 - ii. Being born without the Old Sin Nature and living a life without sin (Impeccability) he was qualified to go to the cross and die a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all of our sins
 - iii. This is the means of our being purchased from the slave market of sin.
- 10. The fact that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ paid his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for ALL HUMAN SINS does not mean all HUMAN beings are out of the slave market.
 - i. Each and every individual human who wants out of the slave market of sin must express FAITH alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ALONE to accept his offer of freedom from the total control of the Old Sin Nature and eternal salvation.
- 11. Redemption is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross directed toward sin and is the saving acts of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by which he purchases our freedom from the slave market of sin and the coin of this purchase is called the blood of Christ.
- 12. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the ONLY qualified human being and it begins with the virgin birth and his being born without the Old Sin Nature and then his impeccable life without sin. **Rom 5:19, Phil 2:8, Heb 9:22, Job Eph 1:7, Col 1:14, 1Pet 1:18**
 - i. In addition Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was WILLING to redeem us and this was taught in the Old Testament Scripture by the use of the blood of animals in sacrifice for sin.
- 13. The principle of redemption says that sin is no longer an issue in life and because of our redemption by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross we can imply name a post salvation committed sin and be instantly forgiven because God the Father has already been judged.
 - i. We call this rebound **1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:28-31**
- D. Reconciliation is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross directed toward Man
 - 1. It is important to NOTICE that we have done nothing to facilitate this redemption it is totally accomplished by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and there is nothing we can add to it, and nothing we can take away from it.
 - 2. Reconciliation is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ toward MAN.
 - 3. It recognizes the fact that there is a great barrier between man and God that being the wall of Sin which has a penalty of Spiritual Death, the problem also of physical birth and spiritual death.
 - i. There is also the in this barrier the problem of Relative Righteousness where man is said to be -R and God as +R.
 - ii. -R cannot have fellowship or relationship with +R, Man has flawed character while God has perfect character therefore how can God have relationship with man's flawed character.
 - iii. In addition there is LIFE, we have physical life, called human life composed of biological life and soul life while God has Eternal Life therefore how can we live without God forever if we do not have his Eternal Life.
 - 4. There is no way to get over, under around or through this barrier as religion tries to do.

- i. Religion tries to build up a system of working for salvation to enable you to climb over the wall on the blocks of our successful good deeds or use your works to dig under the wall, or find a crack in the wall whereby you can help God repair it.
 5. The GREAT Issue is as always GRACE and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the one who has saved us by removing all parts of the barrier wall.
 - i. Sin is solved by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under the doctrines of unlimited atonement and redemption.
 - ii. The Penalty for sin was paid for under the doctrine of Expiation.
 - iii. The Physical Birth problem is circumvented by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ requiring spiritual rebirth and we must be born again or regenerated.
 - iv. Relative righteousness is solved by the imputation of Absolute Righteousness to the new believer resulting in justification.
 - v. The problem of the character of God is solved by Propitiation and the problem of position in Adam is solved by position in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
 6. Therefore the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross REMOVES totally the barrier between man and God.
 - i. Man therefore can step over the line by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 7. Therefore reconciliation is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ reconciling Man with God by means of the cross.
- E. Propitiation is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross directed toward God
 1. This takes us back to the Essence of God and the problem is God in his perfection cannot give Eternal Life to man who is a sinner with an Old Sin Nature.
 2. This can only be accomplished by someone to go to the cross who has an Absolute Righteousness like God the Father and this is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ with Absolute Righteousness in his deity and his humanity.
 3. The Justice of God the wages of sin is death therefore Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ pays this penalty on the cross with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death.
 4. Therefore the Righteousness of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross satisfies the Righteousness of God the Father.
 5. Bearing our sins on the cross and receiving total punishment for them satisfies the Justice of God and therefore the wages of sin was paid on the cross.
 6. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ dies in Substitutionary Spiritual Death for us paying for our freedom and salvation.
 7. God the Father is satisfied, propitiated and therefore Free to give to the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ his Love, Eternal Life without compromise his Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice.
- F. These 3 principles are all involved in “The One Having Saved Us”
 1. There is often a great concern about heaven and Eternal Life and there are religious groups who understand this concern and offer a system of working and penance or function whereby they tell you if you work hard enough you can go to some middle place like purgatory but there is absolutely NO WAY to work your way to heaven.
 2. We are saved by Grace through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - i. You cannot be saved by any system of working or efforts or ability nor by any penance.
 - ii. This is a farce and evil and satanic.
 - iii. What it takes to be saved is inside us NOW and that is our volition.
 - iv. Our volition can be related to meritorious systems of Rationalism and Empiricism
 3. In addition we carry around in our soul FAITH which is NON meritorious Volition.
 - i. FAITH is based on the subject being ANY ONE any man in Human History.

- ii. FAITH is based on an OBJECT which is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
 - iii. Faith is a system of perception and is not ever BLIND faith and is just as valid as any other system of perception and the means by which we have learned most of what we know in life.
 - iv. Much of what we learn is unprovable but we learn it by faith.
 - v. The merit in the system of faith perception is based on the object of FAITH.
 - vi. The OBJECT of faith for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
4. We must understand that GRACE means everything depends on God and he must supply and provide and if there is any work to be done HE must do the work and we go along for the ride.
- i. Every person who has ever believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is under operation Holy Calling.

Lesson #9 Series # 469 2Tim 1:9

- I. Freedom through Military Victory: 11/11/1976
- A. Certificate issued by George V for soldiers which died in WWI.
 - 1. He whom this scroll commemorates was numbered among those who at the call of King and country left all that was dear, endured hardness, faced danger, finally passed out of the sight of men by the path of duty and self sacrifice giving up their own lives that others might live in freedom. Let those who come after see to it that his name is not forgotten.
 - B. It has taken the death of many men and same self sacrifice to bring us to this point of our freedom.
 - C. BOOK: Hood's Texas Brigade. The end quotes a monument for Hood's Brigade, 1st Tx Regiment had the most casualties in any single battle on both sides.
 - 1. Not for fame nor reward not for place or rank, not lured by ambition or goaded by necessity, but in simple obedience to duty as they understood it, these men suffered all, sacrificed all, endured all, and DIED.
- II. The Spiritual Conflict of the appeal trial of the Angelic Conflict.
- A. As occurs on occasion people claim to want to leave a better world for the NEXT generation but there is in fact no such possible outcome to life and history.
 - 1. Each generation is responsible for making its own world as AS GOES THE BELIEVER IN Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace SO GOES THAT GENERATION.
 - B. Each generation in all of Human History is sustained and supported by the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 1. We are free and have freedom to live our lives as we wish.
 - 2. EX: If we enter into the military service a system of authority and discipline
 - i. It is not always fair in fact rarely fair.
 - ii. We must have the flexibility to stay under this authority and learn the principle of self discipline and this is one of the factors which brings to us the capacity for every facet of life.
 - iii. This is a principle under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - 3. EX: This is also duplicated in the Spiritual Life where we as believer are free to take in Bible Doctrine consistently and daily but to do so we must come under the authority of whoever is our right Pastor Teacher.
 - i. This means that we must have flexibility and from this comes self discipline and from this comes Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as a lifestyle with capacity for all aspects of Life.
 - C. In salvation we make adjustment to the Justice of God through FAITH ALONE in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone and there is nothing we as human beings can ever do to assist or add to this mechanic of salvation **Eph 2:8-9**

1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we enter the Plan of God and as part of our grace support in his plan he gives to us 39 irrevocable assets for our Spiritual Life and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and these 39 assets cannot ever be removed from us nor can we ever be taken out of the Plan of God nor from the Royal Family of God.

D. Principles:

1. All Grace Orientation begins with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. When we begin to understand the means, mechanics and principles behind these for our salvation we then begin to orient to the concept of GRACE.
 - ii. God never changes his policy nor his Modus Operandi and therefore starting our Spiritual Life in GRACE we are to continue in Grace Orientation and function.
 - iii. We continue by recognition of God's Provisions for Our life, our blessing, our spiritual growth and how we enter into and participate in the Angelic Conflict.
2. No one reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace without a thorough understanding of Bible Doctrine in general and Sotieriology in particular.
 - i. There are 3 basic doctrines and 10 extra doctrines in the concept of Salvation:
 - a. Redemption == the work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross in Substitutionary Spiritual Death toward sin.
 - b. Reconciliation == the work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross in Substitutionary Spiritual Death toward man.
 - c. Propitiation == the work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross in Substitutionary Spiritual Death toward God.
 - d. All three problems of spiritual death are solved in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross so that it is simply that we are to express faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone or Believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Eternal Life.
 - ii. Once we have expressed faith in Christ we enter into the GRACE Plan of God which has various stages:
 - a. Saving Grace == Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone gives us eternal salvation.
 - b. Living or Logistical Grace == we are kept alive by God and his provisions on a day to day basis in the world ruled by Satan with purpose and objectives to be fulfilled.
 - i) We are kept alive by the Grace of God and no believer in Human History ever departs this life until God is ready to take us.
 - ii) We are therefore alive under the principle of the Grace of God and have food shelter clothing transportation EVERYTHING NEEDED TO ALLOW US TO EXERCISE OUR VOLITION TO TAKE IN BIBLE DOCTRINE CONSISTENTLY AND ADVANCE IN THE SPIRITUAL LIFE.
 - c. Super Grace / Ultra Super Grace == the direct blessing from God for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 5 categories, 4 for our life in time and 1 for our death under grace blessings.
 - i) Spiritual
 - ii) Temporal
 - iii) Association
 - iv) Historical
 - v) Dying
 - vi) The objective of the believer being kept alive is so that God can bless you in this life but he can only do this under a grace principle which demands that each believer who is to be blessed have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- vii) The objective is to use every believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as a witness or demonstration in the Angelic Conflict and to use these believers as a battleground for the blessings he has designed for you.
- viii) All blessing by grace comes because of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

d. Surpassing Grace

- 3. The one having saved us is one in whom we must never be ashamed.
 - i. Capacity for Category I Love toward Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ determines our Grace Orientation, course of blessing in our life and capacity for life and ability to be a blessing to others in this life.

III. The call of God related to the privileges and benefits of GRACE.

- A. God by keeping you alive on this earth has given each of us as believers an engraved invitation to have blessing in this life no matter the circumstances of history.
 - 1. He wants for us to have the best of everything spiritually and materialistically in this life.
 - 2. God wants us to have the best of everything in life and since we are believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ GOD HAS A PURPOSE FOR OUR LIFE and that purpose is BLESSING FOR US IN TIME.
 - 3. We are invited into the grace plan and enjoy its benefits and privileges and the way it functions under GRACE.
 - 4. We are left behind really to enjoy life and we do not have to strain and suffer in order to go to heaven.
 - 5. This is all untrue with regard to Bible Doctrine.
- B. We have an invitation to enter the Plan of God and enjoy its privileges and benefits but this invitation has an alternative:
 - 1. This alternative is Divine Discipline in time (Not mentioned here).
 - 2. Our life therefore based on this invitation of God into his plan has meaning, purpose and definition and was designed for us to be perfectly happy and have perfect capacity in this life and by association with you this for others.
- C. In as much as we have been called and elected we are not to be ashamed of the lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is the key to our election and entrance into the grace Plan of God of blessing and benefit.
 - 1. Hagios == Holy is a counterpart to the word used for Saint
 - 2. Every believer is a "saint" by virtue of being saved and in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 3. Therefore we are all called Holy as believers without regard to our Status Quo as believers.
 - 4. Since every believer is HOLY there must be a reason for it and it most certainly cannot be the life we live since none of us are perfect and we will always sin as long as we live.
 - 5. We none of us have a perfect record and will continue to sin after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and why we need the rebound technique.
 - 6. Holy is not related to our personal pattern of living which has sinfulness in it.
 - 7. HOLY actually refers to being "SET APART" in the Plan of God.

IV. Doctrine of Election:

- A. There are things which God did for us in Eternity Past:
 - 1. Knowing we were going to express our faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he ELECTED, PREDESTINED, and provided for us a part of the DIVINE DECREE in ETERNITY PAST.
 - i. Our Part of the Divine Decree is where we get our Super Grace blessings, Surpassing Grace blessings, Our length of life, and everything in our life to sustain us as believers.
 - 2. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he provided 39 assets for our Spiritual Life, including redemption, reconciliation and propitiation.

3. After this everything in time for our life is designed for our blessing and we have the choice as to whether we will receive this blessing or Divine Discipline.
 4. We are elected at the point of salvation for blessing and privilege in time as well as for eternity.
- B. Election is a bonifide principle of theology:
1. (heb) vachir == Is 42:1, Is 45:4 a key passage for understanding the principle of election.
 - i. If you understand election you can understand predestination which allows you to understand why you are here and where you are going and why you still have free will.
 - ii. If you misunderstand predestination you will misunderstand election and why you are here and if this is the case you will never understand why you were here until you have left.
 2. (gr) eklektos == **Matt 24:22, 24, 31** used for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in the tribulation, for all believers in **Rom 8:33, Col 3:12, 1Tim 5:21, 1Pet 1:2, ETC.**
 3. (gr) suneklektos == others in the plan of God with us. **1Pet 5:13**
 4. (gr) ekloge == out from logos or out from the word emphasizing the doctrine of election related to the doctrine of the divine decree. **Rom 11:5, 7, 28, 1Thes 1:4**
 5. (gr) klesis == derived from the verb Kaleo == to call or to be invited into a plan for benefit **2Tim 1:9**
- C. Definition:
1. Election is that doctrine which relates the believer to the Plan of God from Eternity Past.
 - i. This shows that God had the good sense to know you would believe in Christ and did something about it long before you ever existed.
 - a. When we pray for things we must realize that these prayers were all provided for in Eternity Past under the divine decree.
 2. Election is part of the divine decree
 3. God has always been omniscient and therefore he knew in Eternity Past all about each and everyone of us and there never has been nor will ever be a single creature who has lived in the creation of God which he did not know about from Eternity Past.
 - i. In Eternity Past he knew all our decisions for all of our life both positive or good decisions and negative or bad decisions, all our successes in life and all our failures.
 - ii. God in Eternity Past knew each and every free will choice we would make and who would not believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and who would believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the exact moment in time when this would occur.
 - iii. Since he knew this in Eternity Past he at that time set you up in his plan and provided everything you would ever need in a glorious manner for time and eternity.
 - iv. Knowing every person in time who would believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ God made provision for each and everyone of us.
 4. These plans are called Decrees including provision blessing and honor for believers in time and eternity, therefore election is defined as the Plan of God for the believer PREDESIGNED in Eternity Past fulfilled in time and the eternal future.
 - i. The key to understanding the doctrine of election is understanding that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was ELECTED in Eternity Past.

Is 42:1

v1: Behold my servant, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, whom I have sustained his humanity in time, my chosen one, elected to privilege to change history again and again, in whom my soul delights; I have put my Spirit upon him through indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit as part of Logistical Grace, he will bring forth justice to the gentile nations.

Is 45:4

v4: The Lord God of Israel, who called you by his name for the sake of Jacob my servant, even Israel my elected one to privilege, I have call you by my name, I have given you a title of honor

1Pet 2:4

v4: Come to him, to that living stone, rejected by men but in God's sight chosen and precious;

1Pet 2:6

v6: For contained in the scripture (Is 28:16), "Behold, I lay in Zion a choice stone, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ God of Israel, a precious cornerstone, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, and he who believes in him will not be disappointed."

- ii. All members of the trinity knew in Eternity Past that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ would come to the earth in the appeal of the trial of the Angelic Conflict in Hypostatic Union.
 - iii. And God has provided for each of us as believers JUST as he has provided for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union.
 - iv. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Eternity Past was GOD and had all the characteristics of essence that God the Father and God the Holy Spirit had.
 - v. They all knew that there would come a situation when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ would in time become human being born from a virgin therefore free from the Old Sin Nature and from the imputation of Adam's Original Sin.
 - vi. He would have human body, soul and spirit and therefore in Eternity Past God the Father and God the Holy Spirit got together and decided what they would do to sustain Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on this earth.
 - vii. Each God the Father and God the Holy Spirit has certain categorical responsibilities which have been fulfilled in the 1st advent.
 - viii. One of the great blessings from studying of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is to see how God the Father and God the Holy Spirit sustained the humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ during the first advent.
 - ix. This is NOW in our time HISTORICAL FACT and just as God the Father and God the Holy Spirit sustained God the Son Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the 1st advent so now they sustain US as believers now in our life so that the SAME POWER, BLESSING and WISDOM sustains us now but MORE SO.
 - x. This means that no matter how tired or bored or depressed you are or become, GOD STILL HAS A PLAN AND PURPOSE FOR YOUR LIFE.
 - xi. Our only preparation for this Plan of God is based on consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to give us the capacity for what is to come from this plan and purpose of God.
 - xii. God only lets the horse pull the cart, or lets capacity precede the blessings for believers.
 - xiii. You have to have capacity for money, love or success before you get the blessings FROM GOD.
 - xiv. You never need capacity for what the devil provides because it is only a cheapo copy of what God has for you.
 - xv. Everything is related to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ according to this passage in Is.
5. Therefore, AFORTIORI: If God provided everything needed to sustain Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in time in the 1st advent then he can do no less for each of us as believers in the Church Age being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and SHARING his election.
- i. The election of the believer in the Church Age is different than the election of the believer in the time of the Old Testament Scripture since WE ARE Royal Family of God while the believer in the Old Testament Scripture time was only FAMILY of God.
 - ii. The battlefield royalty assigned Christ at his session at the right hand of God the Father for his strategic victory of Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross was the necessity for the intercalation of the Church Age pausing the Age of Israel and making us by means of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, Royal Family of God.
- D. Election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

1. This is the most important election in history, far beyond that of each believer and this principle of election from Eternity Past sustains Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as well.
 - i. He is the elected ONE and the one who is held in honor.
 - ii. **Therefore IF and it is TRUE we are in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ this means that God can hold you in NO LESS HONOR without regard to your status quo in life.**
2. In the doctrine of election God the Father does not hold us in HONOR just ONE that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - i. By this times there are and have been MULTI MILLIONS of Believers but all are sinners but Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is perfect, impeccable, sinless, untemptable while we all are imperfect, peccable, and sinful, Temptable.
 - ii. Everything that is wonderful and perfect, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is; and everything that he is we are not experientially BUT, he is held in honor and because he is held in honor and because of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit entering us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, WE ARE HELD IN THE SAME HONOR AS CHRIST – THIS IS ELECTION.
 - iii. It is inevitable therefore that members of the Royal Family of God share his election through the mechanics of being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.

Eph 1:3-6

v3: Blessed or worthy of praise and glorification, the God and father of our lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, the one having provided US (all believers) benefits or blessings, by means of every spiritual benefit or blessing in heavenly places because of or IN Christ.

v4: Just or even as He, God the Father, chose or elected us as Royal Family of God for himself in him (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) before the foundation or beginning of the world, Eternity Past, for the purpose that we should keep on being set apart to God or holy and even unblemished or blameless before or in the presence of him, God the Father, through the agency of LOVE.

v5: In love or by means of virtue love having pre-designed us for the purpose of adoption, with the result of the appointment of adult sons for Himself through Jesus Christ according to the benevolent grace purpose from the source of His will.

v6: resulting in recognition or praise of God's Glory from the source of his grace from which he has pursued us with grace in the one having been loved (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ).

3. V3 tells us that God the Father is worthy of Praise and glory and knowing this and his perfection the next statement leaves us in a quandary since we being imperfect and sinful believers are said to have from him blessing and benefits.
 - i. The missing factor here is the election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. We being IN Christ is our being in union with Christ because of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and as a result we SHARE HIS:
 - a. destiny – why we are predestined
 - b. election – why we are able to be blessed by God.
 - c. righteousness – why we are justified
 - d. Eternal Life – why we will live with him in heaven eternally.
 - e. Priesthood – why we can represent self to God.
 - f. Kingship – why we are royalty in the Royal Family of God
 - g. Everything we have in terms of our respectability, acceptance, holiness, being held in high honor in heaven and all other things incompatible with our weaknesses and failings in this life all depend on who and what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is.
4. Election is being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and sharing all that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has and is.
 - i. This is in fact what Christianity is.
 - ii. Christianity is NOT a religion which is the devils secret weapon and his ace trump card and the WORST thing which ever happened to this world.

- iii. Religion is penance, works, pain, agony, suffering for Jesus and all the rest of the taboos and weirdo things which go in in the name of Christianity an it is working for your salvation or spirituality.
 - iv. In Christianity the WORK is DONE and had been provided from Eternity Past and is called GRACE which means NO WORK.
 - v. GRACE does not mean “unmerited favor” it means NO WORK, God the Father did the planning, God the Son did the execution of the plan, God the Holy Spirit revealed and empowers the plan and there is NO PLACE WHERE WE CAN TAKE CREDIT OR GET INTO THE ACTION AT ALL.
5. The amazing part of the Plan of God is that NOT ONLY Does he do all the work but he has to chase us through life to get us to STAND STILL so that he can throw grace at us.
- i. (ff) Stand fast and watch the deliverance of the lord, the lord will fight for you today.
 - ii. This is how stupid we are and the only way to STAND STILL is through consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
6. Therefore The election of the Royal Family of God is related to our union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Baptism of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- E. Election is the basis for the Church Age royalty.
- 1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit is responsible for 5 of the 39 irrevocable assets given us for our Spiritual Life.
 - i. Regeneration is first where by God the Holy Spirit restores to us a Human Spirit thus making us born again.
 - ii. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit whereby God the Holy Spirit enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit whereby God the Holy Spirit comes to indwell our bodies
 - iv. Sealing whereby we are sealed to the day of redemption and receipt of our Resurrection Body therefore giving us Eternal Life.
 - v. Presentation to each of us of a spiritual gift.
 - 2. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is the basis for election and entrance into the Status Quo of Royal Family of God. 1Cor 12:13 connected to 1Thes 1:4 tells it all.

1Cor 12:13

v13: For by means of One Spirit, God the Holy Spirit, we were all baptized into One Body, whether Slaves of free, Greek or Jew for we were all made to drink of one spirit, for the body is not one part but many parts.

1Thes 1:4

v4: Brethren, beloved by God Keep knowing and never forget his election to privilege for you.

2Thes 2:13

v13: But we are always obligated to give thanks to God concerning you, Royal Family of God Spiritual Mature believers, having been loved by the Lord, because God has elected you from eternity past to be saved, through sanctification by the Spirit and faith in doctrine.

- i. This is an identification whereby God the Holy Spirit enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and is the mechanics of positional truth.
 - a. Through positional truth we share the election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and without positional truth no believer can understand the Plan of God for his life or his royalty until he understands election.
 - b. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we immediately have the sanctification of God the Holy Spirit and union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and we therefore share the election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- ii. Through resurrection, ascension and session Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was seated at the right hand of God the Father and received his battlefield royalty but was without a royal family.

- iii. We in the Church Age as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ are that Royal Family of God because of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
 - iv. Under positional sanctification we share both is election and his royalty.
- F. The election of the Royal Family of God:
- 1. This is the Church Age believer and we are royalty forever and union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit means we SHARE the election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his royalty.
 - i. Therefore every Church Age believer is called SAINT (set apart one) and ELECTED.
 - 2. During the height of carnality in Corinth which was the MOST carnal group of believers ever to exist in 1Cor 1:2 they are called the Church of God at Corinth to those who have been sanctified in Christ Jesus saints by election.
 - i. Even those who are dying or have died the Sin Unto Death.
 - 3. Regardless of your Status Quo as an individual in time if you are a believer having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone you are a "SAINT BY ELECTION". Eph 1:4
 - 4. The principle of this election of the Royal Family of God:

Rom 8:28

v28: THEREFORE, WE, Consistently Advancing Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace, HAVE LEARNED DOGMATICALLY, SUDDENLY REALIZED, LEARNED TO KNOW or PERCEIVE from reverse concentration, IN FACT, THAT TO THE ADVANTAGE OF THOSE MATURE BELIEVERS persisting in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, WHO LOVE THE UNIQUE GOD, from Reciprocal Love for God Motivation, HE, GOD, CAUSES ALL THINGS, Blessing, Adversity, and Undeserved Suffering in time, to continue TO WORK TOGETHER FOR GOOD OF INTRINSIC VALUE Equation of Hope Plan of God, TO the advantage of THOSE, both individual mature believers and the client nation, ONLY, WHO ARE ELECTED ACCORDING TO PRIVILEGE, Royal Family of God, forming the pivot, AS A PART OR ON THE BASIS OF A PREDETERMINED PLAN (Execution of the Equation of Hope Plan of God, X + Y + Z = Maximum Glorification of God).

Rom 8:29

v29: BECAUSE WE believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God KNOW, from doctrine, THAT WHOM HE, GOD THE FATHER, HAS FOREKNOWN before hand in his thinking from Eternity Past, HE ALSO DECIDED BEFOREHAND, PREDESIGNED, FOREORDAINED OR PREDESTINED US into the perfect Plan of God for our life; TO BE CONFORMED ONES, as Royal Family of God in the Church Age through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON (who provided our Spiritual Life), IN ORDER THAT HE, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, MIGHT BECOME THE FIRST BORN through resurrection, ascension and session to the right hand of God, AMONG MANY BROTHERS of the Royal Family of God.

Rom 8:30

v30: AND, we know that, WHOM HE, GOD THE FATHER, DECIDED BEFOREHAND, PREDESIGNED, FOREORDAINED OR PREDESTINED, providing a plan for us to share all Christ had in Hypostatic Union, THESE SAME ONES, MATURE CHURCH AGE BELIEVERS, as Royal Family of God, HE ALSO ELECTED TO PRIVILEGE, giving responsibility for execution of the plan, MOREOVER OR ALSO THESE SAME ONES HE ALSO JUSTIFIED OR DECLARED RIGHTEOUS OR VINDICATED at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and execution of the Spiritual Life, and whom he justified THESE SAME ONES, HE ALSO GLORIFIED or gave a share of glory from imputed blessing in time and eternity.

Rom 8:31

v31: THEREFORE or CONSEQUENTLY, FACE TO FACE WITH THESE THINGS which are honorable and magnificent (prior context Rom 8:28-30), TO WHAT HIGH QUALITY THINKING AND CONCLUSION ARE WE FORCED? IF THE GOD [is] (ellipsis) FOR US or on our side, AND IT IS TRUE HE IS, WHO [can be] (ellipsis) AGAINST US as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God?

Rom 8:32

v32: THE GOD THE FATHER WHO DID NOT EVEN SPARE HIS VERY OWN UNIQUE ADULT SON, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, BUT HE, GOD THE FATHER, ON BEHALF OF ALL OF US, DELIVERED HIM, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, OVER through judicial imputation of all personal sins TO THE PUNISHMENT OF SUBSTITUTIONARY SPIRITUAL DEATH JUDGMENT as an act of justice, as a substitute; it is surprising that you cannot understand this logical concept; HOW SHALL HE, God the Father NOT ALSO, WITH HIM, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, FREELY OR GRACIOUSLY OR BENEFICIALLY IN GRACE GIVE TO US from the Justice of God THE ALL THINGS as temporal blessing, He DOES. (ALL Grace Blessings in time)

- i. In this lesson he has stated that this passage applies to the believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace but also to any believer all being elected at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. He later stated unequivocally that this segment of Romans chapter 8 was for MATURE BELIEVERS ONLY those in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace. See the study of the book of Romans.
5. The life of the believer is always dependent on his attitude toward Bible Doctrine:
 - i. When functioning consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine the life will be a wonderful life with great blessing from God.
 - ii. When negative toward Bible Doctrine that life will be fraught with misery and pain under warning, intensive and then dying Divine Discipline.
 - iii. Both categories of believers are under the Plan of God and either it will carry us along or run over top of us.
 6. ***The most interesting part of the GRACE Plan of God is that in Eternity Past God knew exactly what we are like and yet he still designed for us great blessings in time BUT he left the acquisition of those blessings be dependent on our use of our own personal individual volition as directed toward the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the Bible Doctrines of the word of God.***
 - i. This is ELECTION.
 7. We are also said to be predestined meaning we share the destiny of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever therefore will be here with him in the millennium and in eternity and rule (hopefully) under his guidance.
 - i. Election means we are in the Plan of God from salvation through eternity.
 8. We are all declared Justified by God having received his own righteousness and this justification is vindication under the Plan of God.
 9. We are also Glorified, where as in heaven all believers, mature through reversionists will have glory, in time the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will receive the glory of blessings directly from God while this action on the part of God glorifies him.
 - i. Being ALL believers are glorified in heaven will pull all believers together under the residence of heaven.
 - ii. Grace can in fact glorify even a reversionist and for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace he can do exceedingly and abundantly above all we can think or imagine both in time and for all eternity.
 10. There is NO LIMIT to the blessings which can exist in your life and the wonderful things which life offers to you as a believer and the only LIMITING Factor is your volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - i. See the Dirty Dozen movie which glorified all of these murderers and criminals.
 - ii. The principle is “No matter how you fail in life it is possible for someone to come up with a plan to make you look good”.
 - iii. God has done just this, this is grace, this is election.
 11. The key to GRACE and the Plan of God is that LONG before Human History even started everything was provided for us in the Plan of God under the principle of Grace.

Col 3:12

v12: Put on, therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved put on the affections of heart, a right love of affections of grace compassion, capacity for love, a gracious disposition leading to generosity, a Mental Attitude of grace, meekness or freedom from arrogance {and} steadfastness or stability.

G. The objective of Election in time.

1. It is to encourage the believer to attain the tactical victory of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the life therein.

Eph 4;1, 2Tim 1:13-14, Tit 1:1

- i. Super Grace is the only way to fulfill this passage.
- H. Jewish believers present a problem and the Jewish unbeliever as well.

1. The question arises as to whether the Jew has lost out in history.

Rom 11:1-

v1: I say therefore The God has not ever refused, rejected, cast away, pushed aside or repudiated, nor ever will, his people has he? Definitely Not or Hell NO! For I myself also am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, a member of the tribe of Benjamin.

v2: The God has not rejected nor repudiated his people, Jewish believers, whom he has foreknown. Or Do you not understand what the writings of scripture (1Kings 19:10+14) has always said about Eli'jah, when he spoke or pleaded or judged or prosecuted to the God against Israel?

v3: "Lord, they have with pleasure violently viciously killed slowly and painfully your prophets, they have torn down and demolished your altars, in fact I alone am the only one left or remaining, and they seek my life."

v4: But what says God or is the divine answer or response to him, Elijah? (1Kings 19:18) "I have left behind in a place of honor as a rear guard and reserved to myself an honorable pivot of seven thousand people who are of such a character because of their being believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God that have not bowed a knee to Ba'al."

v5: Therefore In the same manner also, there has come to be at this present period of time in the Church Age, a remnant or pivot of mature believers according to a selection or election to privilege by grace from the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, which has come into existence from the past.

v6: Now If therefore by means of GRACE and it is, then logically NOT on the basis of or BY MEANS OF LEGITIMATE HONORABLE RIGHTEOUS HUMAN WORKS; otherwise, in logical rational conclusion, grace is no longer grace in itself.

v7: What shall we say then (idiom) Therefore, how does the case stand, or to what conclusion are we forced, what or that which Israel the racial and national Jew is constantly seeking for, salvation by their works, this is not obtained, but in contrast to Jews keeping the law for salvation, those Jewish Believers elected to privilege have obtained it but the rest having rejected the truth, built up Scar Tissue of the Soul and are hardened in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

2. Election for Jews in the Church Age is the same as for the gentile.

- I. Election is used for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in the tribulation. **Matt 24:21**

1. Those under the plan of election who fulfill it in time ALWAYS REACH Super Grace and when they do so they become a basis of blessing to all in their periphery under blessing by association and historical impact and everything and everyone is blessed and everything is preserved including the nation in spite of evil foreign and domestic policies.
2. It is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace fulfilling the principle of election who is the spiritual atlas in every generation of Human History.

Lesson #10 Series # 469 2Tim 1:9

- I. Glenn Tucker (Historian), Books - High Tide of Gettysburg, Lee & Longstreet at Gettysburg (get these 2), Patriots & Poltrunes,
 - A. Lee is one of the 4 greatest Americans ever to live in this country.
 1. Gettysburg was the worst moment in Lee's Life.
 2. This book tells the whole story of Lee and Longstreet and how Longstreet saved Lee and Bragg several times in the war between the states.
 3. He had proven that Artillery was not that effective at that time but the muskets or rifles they had could kill a person from 300 to 800 yards.
 - 4.
 - B. The Causes of the War between the States:
 1. Slavery was NOT the cause of the war between the states, Slavery was not the issue at Gettysburg.
 2. One misconception frequently repeated and often challenged was that the American nation was reborn during the civil war but the truth is that it was torn apart and the wounds rubbed raw by retaliatory aspects of reconstruction (the truth and facts of the detrimental aspects of the reconstruction era).
 3. History written by selecting the facts that harmonize with current developments would seem to have little value however clamorous be the initial but dwindling applause.
 - i. Most historians are guilty of interpreting history within the times in which they live but not interpreting it in the times in which it occurred but going with trends in the time in which they live and today because there are so many socialists and

communists among historians today they are misinterpreting the war between the states totally.

- ii. Slavery was a latent and remote cause of sectional misunderstanding but NOT THE ISSUE that made men fly to arms and fight one of the most stubborn of all wars.
- iii. Slavery was an anachronism which soon would have perished at less cost and with little if any LOSS OF LIFE.
- iv. It was not necessary to fight the war between the states for slavery because slavery was already on its way out by peaceful means.
- v. Slavery would have ended if the War had not intervened with a more orderly and compassionate program for the freed man as he stepped into the American world and society and the war actually made the situation WORSE.
- vi. The best thought in both North and South as represented by Lee, Jackson, Lincoln and others FAVORED ORDERLY EMANCIPATION.
- vii. VERY FEW in the southern army maybe 1 in 1000 thought he was fighting to maintain slavery.
- viii. There was LITTLE about slavery in the letters written home by southern soldiers and emancipation was in the spirit of the times and no more than the average statesman would be needed to achieve without resorting to WAR.
- ix. Czar Alexander II of Russia was not even a mediocre statesman but was in fact somewhat stupid and he had no difficulty in emancipating the serfs in Russia and LINCOLN was exceedingly smarter than Alexander.
- x. Lincoln should have just sat still and waited out slavery but NO, Lincoln started the civil war all by himself when he called for volunteers for the northern army.
- xi. Had war not come President Lincoln with his deep humanitarian purposes could very well have brought about a bloodless emancipation and in that aim he would have had the assistance of some of the best minds in the south.
- xii. Emancipation was OVERDUE and was not an issue in that war nor in Gettysburg.
- xiii. The main question was whether the United States of America should remain 1 nation or become 2.
- xiv. The 1 more devoted to localized (Federal) government than the other.
- xv. One of the most melancholy aspects of history is that most of the great decisions have been made not in the cabinet or legislation nor the courts and often the decisions which decide history are made on the battlefield.
- xvi. Freedom is won or lost on the battlefield not by politicians.

II. As goes the believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine so goes the generation he is in and possibly the next as well.

- A. As goes the teaching of children Bible Doctrine so goes the next generation.
- B. Our great objective is to fulfill the objective the Lord has for us to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and lead in the principle of the Super Grace atlas.
- C. As goes the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace so goes their generation for blessing or cursing.
 1. You cannot do anything to improve the situation for the next generation and each generation must live their own lives.
 2. You cannot make your happiness based on how your children turn out.
 3. For those who do not have children this is not a disgrace and sometimes it is one of the greatest of all blessings and don't knock it and never feel embarrassed when someone hauls out the picture of their grandchildren.
- D. No one can ever become a spiritual atlas by studying the word for himself there MUST be a link between the soul and the doctrine of the bible and this is the Pastor Teacher
 1. Therefore you must gather under strict academic discipline.
 2. You are therefore FREE to come to the local church or bible study or sit at your own desk but the moment you begin studying you are a student without portfolio and you have no rights and must submit to the authority of the Pastor Teacher.

3. This is not easy to do with each of us having different personalities and different Old Sin Natures and different categories of sin.
4. We must have flexibility (What most people lack today), which then produced self discipline and this leads to capacity for life and ultimately to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. You can tell simply if a person is flexible or NOT based on their sense of humor.
5. Even the unbelievers develop capacity for life by developing self discipline from their flexibility and this is ONE absolutely good reason for UNIVERSAL MILITARY TRAINING.
 - i. Put a young man under a TOUGH Drill Instructor who is cruel crude rough and tough and everything this young man is NOT.
 - ii. The DI may be stupid and the young man a genius but this means nothing he must have flexibility.
 - iii. When he is commanded to attention he pops to having flexibility and from this flexibility comes self discipline and from this capacity for life and THIS IS WHY EVERY MALE SHOULD HAVE MILITARY TRAINING.
 - iv. Women do not need this type of training since they will get theirs by marriage.
 - v. This does not work out any longer and women never get it at all not in school or anywhere else today.
 - vi. There is NO PLACE FOR WOMEN IN THE MILITARY except in support functions such as office and nursing functions.

E. Principle:

1. The Pastor Teacher must have great self discipline in order to STUDY consistently and TEACH effectively.
 - i. As he communicates to his congregation they must have self discipline to listen and learn what is taught.
2. It is in fact refreshing to see people in a group under discipline and there is a definite relationship between flexibility under self discipline and SANITY.
3. Self discipline starts with the Pastor Teacher and moves to the congregation.

F. Principle of Orientation to GRACE:

1. Grace includes authority.
2. In GRACE God does the DOING and We do the receiving but we do not earn deserve nor work for it.
 - i. Everything depends on who and what God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit are.
 - ii. People often get the idea that grace means we are all equal and great buddies.
3. The first thing which God set up to communicate GRACE to the Human Race is a system of AUTHORITY.
 - i. Authority is essential
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher & the Word of God
 - iii. The combination of these 2 linked by self discipline produces the communication by which we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - iv. If you ever walk into a congregation of a Pastor Teacher who has everything wrong and is mixed up even about the gospel you must sit and listen and don't move a muscle and don't make any indication of your displeasure but when the end comes you get up quietly and leave unnoticed and DO NOT ever raise a fuss nor criticize him because he has something YOU DO NOT WHICH IS AUTHORITY.
 - v. This is the CONTENT which is wrong not the personality of the man, NEVER CRITICIZE OR SAY ANYTHING AGAINST HIM.
 - vi. When you are in his congregation HE IS THE AUTHORITY and if he is and wants to be apostate GOD WILL TAKE CARE OF THAT.
 - vii. You sit still until the AMEN and then get up and go out and that is the end of it for you.

- viii. No matter how apostate a pastor is nor in what areas he has failed it is not your place to criticize them since they have one thing you do not have and that is AUTHORITY.
 - ix. If you don't like it you never have to come back but never criticize him since he has the gift of Pastor Teacher and the authority in his congregation and YOU DO NOT.
4. When it is God's authority it is quite a thing and GRACE is LOADED with authority.
- i. Grace does not mean you are out from under authority but in fact that you ARE UNDER AUTHORITY.
 - ii. If you cannot get under another local Pastor Teacher where you are living then you get on tapes (cds or dvds now) AND NEVER LET ANY IDIOT TELL YOU YOU HAVE TO GET DOCTRINE FACE TO FACE TO REACH MATURITY.
5. Authority must be considered from many angles
- i. For the Pastor Teacher criticism will bring him extra blessing and he will not lose even one ounce of authority because of it.
 - a. No one can take the authority of the Pastor Teacher from him except the lord.
 - ii. Some people go out and get jobs and think grace means that you have a right to take advantage of your boss.
 - a. Since your job gives you idle time between functions you think you can sit idly and read your bible or recopy your notes ON THE JOB.
 - b. Reading the bible or working on notes is very meritorious but not to do it on company time and this is an authority problem.
 - iii. When women marry a guy and discover he is not as smart as they are, they must remember that HE STILL HAS SOMETHING THAT HIS WIFE DOES NOT HAVE, AUTHORITY.
 - a. He has authority over his wife.
 - b. As long as a woman is NOT married she is free but the MOMENT she says I DO she is looking at her eternal DI for the rest of her life on this earth.
 - c. This woman has NO RIGHT to usurp his authority even if he does not exercise it and she must respect his !!br0ken!!
 - iv. The police have authority and many other areas of life hold authority.
- G. Principles:
- 1. If God keeps you alive you are the beneficiary of GRACE and this REQUIRES him to provide for you to be able to get to Bible Doctrine consistently:
 - i. Food
 - ii. Shelter
 - iii. Clothing
 - iv. Air
 - v. Transportation
 - 2. This is being graced out in order to keep us alive so that we can move consistently to and achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 3. He keeps us alive so that he can bless us but between Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Super Grace blessings there are Many systems of authority and all are GRACE systems of authority.
 - 4. When we have our job it is because of grace and having a job means that there is AUTHORITY OVER US.
 - i. Therefore whatever the company policy or whatever the authority says that is what you must do.
 - ii. You have no right to try to get around the policy and if you cannot comply with the policy and obey and do the job you are required to do then QUIT the job and get out.

- iii. Sneaky people have no respect nor concept of authority and are arrogant only recognizing one authority that being their own.

H. Principle:

1. All Grace Orientation begins with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
2. No one reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace without a thorough understanding of Sotieriology.
3. How do we love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and be loyal to him and the answer is the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
4. This all starts at salvation and after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God capacity for life and love and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ BEGINS with Grace Orientation which starts in the filed of Sotieriology.

I. We were elected in Eternity Past by God the Father under the divine decree and at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we share the election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

1. Election means God has a purpose for your life.
2. Being placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by means of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we share all that Christ has and is.

III. Review the doctrine of Election: Lesson 9

A. Definition:

1. Election is what links the divine decree from Eternity Past with our life in time or history.
 - i. In Eternity Past God provided for each of us a package of Super Grace blessings in 5 categories.
 - ii. All of this was designed for you as part of the divine decree and as these things are fulfilled in by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and living there then you have the principle of ELECTION.
 - iii. God has a plan for your life and blessings for each of us which have been in cold storage for billions of years and we not at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God have the wonderful privilege and opportunity of seeing the things which God had designed for us in Eternity Past FULFILLED IN OUR LIFE DAY BY DAY.
2. Election means in fact simply that God has a plan for your LIFE and you will be alive as long as that plan is functional and when the time comes when you have no further use for God and you have one way or the other completed his plan for your life then if you have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God you will have dying grace blessings as you transfer to eternity but if you are in reversionism then you will die the most miserable horrible death.
 - i. Whether we are advancing or retreating in the Plan of God for our life we are STILL IN THE PLAN OF GOD.
 - ii. We might move out from under the blessing aspect of the Plan of God for us by rejection of Bible Doctrine but we are still in the plan and it will CARRY US ALONG or ROLL OVER US AND GRIND US TO DUST.

B. Election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Is 42:1**

1. As part of the divine decree in Eternity Past Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ agreed to become humanity in the fullness of TIME therefore he did.
 - i. In Eternity Past before he entered into Hypostatic Union under the principle of the divine decree everything needed by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in time was provided for him.
 - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is therefore said to be elected in that HE IS IN THE DIVINE DECREE from Eternity Past.
 - iii. One of the things Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ needed is the support of God the Holy Spirit and this is mentioned in **Is 42:1**
2. All that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ needed in the 1st advent was provided in Eternity Past in the divine decree BECAUSE CHRIST WAS ELECTED.

- i. From the day of our birth to the point of our death everything we would ever need in terms of blessing and benefit from GRACE and GOD was provided in Eternity Past. **1Pet 2:4, 6**
 - ii. **Eph 1 3-6** teaches us that it is inevitable that being in union with Christ Jesus from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit we share in this election of Christ and therefore everything we need for our life has already been provided us in Eternity Past.
 - iii. We are elected for God in Christ before the beginning of the world.
 - iv. As believers every blessing we ever have everything which comes to us from God in any category of blessing is based on election.
 - v. We could not have worked for these thing having NOT even existing at the point of them being set aside for us.
3. You cannot earn, deserve nor work for anything in the Plan of God and blessings we have now and will have in the future are PAST TENSE designed for us in Eternity Past and this is ELECTION.
- C. The Royal Family of God and election:
- 1. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit puts us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this allows us to SHARE his royalty.
 - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross talked of only 2 things, Salvation and Doctrine.
 - ii. After his physical death Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was buried and 3 days later he was resurrected and in his Resurrection Body he walked through the closure on his tomb.
 - iii. The stone of the doorway of the tomb was rolled back not to LET CHRIST OUT but the LET PEOPLE IN to see the EMPTY tomb.
 - iv. Then he ascended and sat at the right hand of the father and received his royal title for his strategic victory and knowing this would occur God the Father provided for the interruption of the Age of Israel by inserting the Church Age to bring forward the Royal Family of God.
 - v. This occurs for each of us because of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit **2Thes 2:13**
 - vi. Our election is therefore PREHISTORIC in its beginning.
 - 2. We therefore share all that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has and is and all was provided for us from Eternity Past.
 - i. This is nothing in comparison to what God has for us in the future and Election is the basket which has the whole thing in it.
 - ii. Therefore the question is HOW CAN YOU EVER WONDER IF YOU ARE GOING TO MAKE IT OR NOT?
 - iii. How can you ever think, I hope I can make it to Super Grace but I don't think so.
 - iv. How can you ever FALTER in the Spiritual Life.
 - v. Simply keep on following the colors by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under self discipline, freedom, authority resulting in capacity for life, love and happiness and blessings.

Lesson #11 Series # 469 2Tim 1:9

- I. Doctrine of Election
 - A. God does have a purpose and plan for each and every one of us.
 - 1. We all receive reminders of this from time to time some times by shock or something in life which brings us around to recognize that we are only here on this earth for a very short time.
 - 2. If you live to 100 years and this is in itself a very short time to be on this earth.
 - B. You will inevitably have contact with others and at times you realize that you only meet some people for a very short time and have only a brief opportunity to do something PERMANENT for them in that time.

1. When we go through this live we have ONE permanent love, the Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and our capacity to love him is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. Some of the BEST friends we will ever make and the ones about whom we should have no regrets are those also in the Plan of God.
 3. The tragedy is that we often fail to realize in YOUTH how important it is to have capacity for life, love, friendship.
 4. Without capacity for love Category III we will never recognize that some of the finest people we will ever know are those who participate in bible study through Berachah Church and RB Thieme Ministries.
 5. This friendship ought to be a source of real blessing to you and these friendships should last forever and ever.
 6. Never look down your nose at another believer they should be your best friends ever.
- C. Because of the lack of Capacity for LIFE in every category, YOUTH is truly WASTED on YOUNG PEOPLE.
1. Very few young people ever take advantage of their youth and very few people actually join the Human Race until they are 30 years old in any case and spend their life vacillating through things in life and LOSE the great principles of what is in Bible Doctrine.
 2. The advantage of the young people who begin to focus on Bible Doctrine and consistent exegetical teaching early is that they can develop capacity for LIFE early and their love for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ can overflow into every periphery of life.
 3. This will bring to them Super Grace blessings at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual, temporal, association and historical blessings and the ability to meet every exigency of life.
 4. In addition then they will have the privilege of dying under conditions of GREAT happiness and dying can be the most wonderful and unusual experience in life if there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. Bible Doctrine must be Priority #1 in life and in our Scale of Values and when priorities are right and there is consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine then we will recognize that GOD HAS A PLAN FOR OUR LIFE.
1. With this realization which comes from understanding of Election we must then realize that God being perfect his Plan for EACH of us is PERFECT and it is impossible for it to be anything LESS than perfect.
 2. Our only problem is to GET INTO and STAY IN the plan he has provided for us and reach the point of being eligible for the blessings he has waiting for us from Eternity Past
 3. ***The only reason for NOT getting to this point is our neglect or rejection in some way of Bible Doctrine the basis for appreciation, capacity for enjoyment, foundation for understanding that God has a plan for your life AND the provision for your entire life, the blessings for your entire life and the ABILITY TO MEET ANY CIRCUMSTANCE IN YOUR LIFE WAS PROVIDED IN ETERNITY PAST.***
- E. Election is the MISSING LINK between the Plan of God designed for each of us in Eternity Past and the fulfillment of that plan in time.
1. There are a number of missing links in the scripture.
 - i. There is the word of God preserved in the scripture which has all the Bible Doctrine we need in it; and There is the congregation of the local church; The missing link is the Pastor Teacher.
 - a. No one ever grows apart from the academic discipline needed for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - b. We are free to assemble ourselves using our volition and freedom to attend the local church and in so doing we come under the authority of our right Pastor Teacher in his communication.
 - c. We must be flexible which produced self discipline which produces capacity for life.

d. Our right Pastor Teacher need not be ALIVE and BREATHING in front of you at the time but can be a voice on a recorded source.

F. Election is a doctrine in the scripture based on Hebrew and Greek words

G. Election relates the Plan of God from Eternity Past to our life in Phase II time as well as forever.

H. Election of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as a key to understanding the doctrine.

Eph 1:3

v3: Blessed or worthy of praise and glorification, the God and father of our lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the one having provided us (all believers) BENEFITS or blessings, by means of every spiritual benefit or blessing in heavenly places because of Christ.

v4: Just or even as He, God the Father, chose or elected us as Royal Family of God for himself in him (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) before the foundation or beginning of the world, Eternity Past, for the purpose that we should keep on being set apart to God or holy and even unblemished or blameless before or in the presence of him, God the Father, through the agency of LOVE.

v5: In love or by means of virtue love having pre-designed us for the purpose of adoption, with the result of the appointment of adult sons for Himself through Jesus Christ according to the benevolent grace purpose from the source of His will.

v6: resulting in recognition or praise of God's Glory from the source of his grace from which he has pursued us with grace in the one having been loved (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ).

1. Each of us are given by God BENEFITS in this life according to our Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and we will have benefits IF we have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. If we have not had these benefits from God then it is obvious we have NEGLECTED the teaching of the word of God as Bible Doctrine and failed to understand the importance of continual and constant intake of Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. This is the greatest tragedy in life NEXT to having people close to you such as friends of loved ones who will spend eternity in the Lake of Fire and separated from you for all eternity.
 - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the perfect friend and has provided for us those who will be our friends in time and forever thereafter.
 - iv. The key to the benefits and blessings from God for us in time is the SPIRITUAL BLESSINGS and if they are not first then your priorities are wrong.
 - v. All spiritual blessings are related to your PERSONAL attitude toward Bible Doctrine and your Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
2. Election is the key to understanding why we are here, where we are going and where we have been and that none of us are UNIMPORTANT in the sight of God.
 - i. We each of us has the opportunity of being of more importance historically, but not known publicly, to carry the load for our generation by our Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. Long before the existence of the world even time itself our importance was known by God.
3. V5b tells us clearly that the Will of God for our life is BENEVOLENT and its purpose in keeping us alive is to bless you and if his will is NOT being accomplished it is because all of this is accomplished in a perfect way since God is perfect and the only perfect way to accomplish this is through the intake of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. There is no substitute for Bible Doctrine and no way to get around the necessity of Bible Doctrine in our life and no way for any of us as believers to avoid the reality of this principle.
 - ii. Without Bible Doctrine for what ever reason, it is impossible for us to realize the benevolence of God in time.
 - iii. ***It is the Will of God to BLESS each and every one of us spiritually, materially, others by association with us, and our generation of history by our presence and persistence in Bible Doctrine and it is the Will of God to bless each of us in dying MORE than in living and then for all eternity with things which cannot***

even be reduced to human understanding or language being so great in their scope.

4. God pursues each of us in GRACE and when that pursuit results in Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine THEN WE WILL MOVE TO THE HIGH GROUND OF MATURITY AND SUPER GRACE AND RECEIVE THE BLESSINGS FROM GOD IN 5 CATEGORIES.
 - i. The pursuit of God for those believers who reject Bible Doctrine can only be the perfect expression of his love for those who reject his plan meaning “for those the lord loves he chastens and skins alive with a whip every son whom he receives”.
 - ii. This is therefore the CURSING of Divine Discipline in the form of Warning, Intensified and ultimately DYING DISCIPLINE.
 - iii. In this case under dying discipline the believer is the most miserable person on the earth.
 - iv. The most miserable people are not the unbeliever under the control of Satan even though they are under a ghastly slavery but they are the believers who have rejected Bible Doctrine or whose attitude toward Bible Doctrine makes the intake of the word haphazard.

I. Election is the basis for Church Age royalty and the Royal Family of God.

J. Election of the Royal Family of God:

1. The Royal Family of God are the believer in the Church Age who are different in category to all other believer in Human History.
 - i. This Church Age is the dispensation in which God is calling out the Royal Family of God for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ called the Body of Christ on Earth and Bride of Christ in heaven and with regard to the assembly for Bible Doctrine at times called (gr) Ecclesia or CHURCH.
 - ii. Aside with regard to human elections and politics:
 - a. It is a very rare thing to find a politician who is not a hypocrite.
 - b. Whenever you find a politician who is NOT a hypocrite then we must call him a statesman such as Barry Goldwater.
 - c. Most conservatives are only arrogant people who are just trying to get into office and make the proper noises and could not care less about principles of life or patriotism and try to be all things to all men to receive all the votes possible.
 - d. We are therefore subjected a lot of propaganda and hypocrisy and some of the biggest phonies of the age and get very little common sense or principle of constitutional application because the people who actually swing the election are those who are so close to being imbeciles it would be difficult to distinguish their ability to think, talk and especially to make a truly informed decision.
 - e. We have become a ridiculous nation since the KEY to our constitution was based on those who had a right to vote and the voting franchise was to be restricted to those who were RESPONSIBLE citizens
 - f. Today the VOTING franchise now include Women which never was true when the constitution was founded and women are under the authority of their husbands and never should have the right to vote.
 - g. Today this voting franchise also includes people who are 2 generations from slavery and only 1 out of 1000 has enough wisdom to know what to do with is vote.
 - h. In addition there are people who have migrated from other countries and even have them in our state department and today in all parts of our government including those who do not accept our form of government nor our form of law and cannot swear allegiance to our nation being aligned with allah as moslems and they have NO CLUE as to what it means to be an American.

- i. Finally in our current day we have people who have migrated into this country ILLEGALLY and who have been in many states given the right to vote knowing NOTHING of our culture or history or constitution nor any of the principles of which this nation was built.
 - j. These and many other people who will vote in every election have no clue what it is all about and if they did they would still be confused because no one trying to get elected ever makes an appeal to Americanism or what the constitution really teaches, and no one ever stands up and says the federal government has gone too far and violated all the rights of the citizens and has essentially destroyed our constitution without tearing it up.
 - k. These things are not discussed because it would only appeal to 5% or less of those who are in the voting franchise.
 - l. The voting franchise was ONLY to include MALE PROPERTY OWNERS OVER 21 years of age and those who served in the military.
2. Election in our passage and in scripture in general does not mean any of this but it is the Plan of God for your life designed in Eternity Past and that God had the good sense to know from his omniscience when we would live, all about our successes and failures in life and to make provision and blessing for it billions of years ago.
3. The Royal Family of God is every believer in the Church Age in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and therefore said to be elected or called.
 - i. This includes the good, the bad, and the reversionistic believers as in Corinth. **1Cor 1:2**
 - ii. This includes the one who committed incest with his mother, fagots and all weird and goofy believers.
 - iii. All are called SAINTS by election sanctified or set apart in Christ Jesus.
 - iv. They as we share his Eternal Life, righteousness and declared justified by God the Father.
 - v. By imputation we are as righteous as Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but NOT by experience.
 - vi. This is based on the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit putting us in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ thus sharing the Righteousness of God of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his Eternal Life as well.
 - vii. We can therefore live with God after our time on this earth because of having the Righteousness of God and Eternal Life of God.
 - viii. We share all Christ is and has **Is 42:1** and **Eph 1:4, 1Cor 1:2, Rom 8:28-32**
4. **All things in this life are caused to work together for the ultimate good of completion of the Plan of God for those believers who love God and the ONLY believers who can love God are those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.**
 - i. We cannot begin to love God until we know God and we cannot know God until we have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which brings to us capacity to LOVE in all 3 categories.
 - ii. We have no capacity for life at the point of salvation and what passes for love with the unbeliever is either a real emotional thing or tenacious principle such as Loyalty.
 - iii. The real capacity for love is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv. Therefore the only believers who can love God are the believers who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - v. All things also work together good for carnal or reversionistic believers and for those under the influence of Evil and mixed up and confused as those believers who are elected according to the principles of GRACE.

- vi. We know this because Paul is assuming that those who understand this passage realize that even when a believer is carnal or in reversionism or under the influence of evil that the Divine Discipline they receive from God is still working together in the Plan of God for its completion.
- 5. We are in the Plan of God forever as believers and God has a purpose for our life in time and in dying and for all eternity and in as much as he is perfect how can this work any other way except for the ultimate good of the completion of the Plan of God.
 - i. In all the heartaches and tragedies and difficulties of our life we must always be aware of this principle that all things are working out for the completion of the Plan of God, THE GOOD of INTRINSIC VALUE.
 - ii. It does not say all things are good since they are not and it will all work out perfectly since this is the ONLY way it can work for believers.
- 6. In Eternity Past God knew we would be believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we are Predestined to become conformed to the image of his son, Christ.
 - i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the first born in the Royal Family of God
- 7. Whom he predestined he also elected, and predestination came first and being that we are given a destiny then we are elected which is the entire Plan of God from Eternity Past for our life in time.
 - i. We must be a good as God and have the same righteousness of God to live with him.
 - ii. Therefore who he elected having given to us his righteousness he then proclaimed us "JUSTIFIED".
 - iii. To live with God we must have his Eternal Life and also his righteousness.
 - iv. As a result of receiving the Righteousness of God and Eternal Life we are then elected ie given a plan for our entire life.
- 8. As believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we will some day also be glorified and it refers to our having the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, Human Good and Evil and minus the Lake of Fire.
- 9. The question then is for us, v31;

Rom 8:28-32

v28: THEREFORE, WE, Consistently Advancing Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace, HAVE LEARNED DOGMATICALLY, SUDDENLY REALIZED, LEARNED TO KNOW or PERCEIVE from reverse concentration, IN FACT, THAT TO THE ADVANTAGE OF THOSE MATURE BELIEVERS persisting in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, WHO LOVE THE UNIQUE GOD, from Reciprocal Love for God Motivation, HE, GOD, CAUSES ALL THINGS, Blessing, Adversity, and Undeserved Suffering in time, to continue TO WORK TOGETHER FOR GOOD OF INTRINSIC VALUE Equation of Hope Plan of God, TO the advantage of THOSE, both individual mature believers and the client nation, ONLY, WHO ARE ELECTED ACCORDING TO PRIVILEGE, Royal Family of God, forming the pivot, AS A PART OR ON THE BASIS OF A PREDETERMINED PLAN (Execution of the Equation of Hope Plan of God, $X + Y + Z =$ Maximum Glorification of God).

v29: BECAUSE WE believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God KNOW, from doctrine, THAT WHOM HE, GOD THE FATHER, HAS FOREKNOWN before hand in his thinking from Eternity Past, HE ALSO DECIDED BEFOREHAND, PREDESIGNED, FOREORDAINED OR PREDESTINED US into the perfect Plan of God for our life; TO BE CONFORMED ONES, as Royal Family of God in the Church Age through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON (who provided our Spiritual Life), IN ORDER THAT HE, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, MIGHT BECOME THE FIRST BORN through resurrection, ascension and session to the right hand of God, AMONG MANY BROTHERS of the Royal Family of God.

v30: AND, we know that, WHOM HE, GOD THE FATHER, DECIDED BEFOREHAND, PREDESIGNED, FOREORDAINED OR PREDESTINED, providing a plan for us to share all Christ had in Hypostatic Union, THESE SAME ONES, MATURE CHURCH AGE BELIEVERS, as Royal Family of God, HE ALSO ELECTED TO PRIVILEGE, giving responsibility for execution of the plan, MOREOVER OR ALSO THESE SAME ONES HE ALSO JUSTIFIED OR DECLARED RIGHTEOUS OR VINDICATED at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and execution of the Spiritual Life, and whom he justified THESE SAME ONES, HE ALSO GLORIFIED or gave a share of glory from imputed blessing in time and eternity.

v31: THEREFORE or CONSEQUENTLY, FACE TO FACE WITH THESE THINGS which are honorable and magnificent (prior context Rom 8:28-30), TO WHAT HIGH QUALITY THINKING AND CONCLUSION ARE WE

FORCED? IF THE GOD [is] (elipsis) FOR US or on our side, AND IT IS TRUE HE IS, WHO [can be] (ellipsis) AGAINST US as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God?

v32: THE GOD THE FATHER WHO DID NOT EVEN SPARE HIS VERY OWN UNIQUE ADULT SON, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, BUT HE, GOD THE FATHER, ON BEHALF OF ALL OF US, DELIVERED HIM, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, OVER through judicial imputation of all personal sins TO THE PUNISHMENT OF *SUBSTITUTIONARY SPIRITUAL DEATH* JUDGMENT as an act of justice, as a substitute; it is surprising that you cannot understand this logical concept; HOW SHALL HE, God the Father NOT ALSO, WITH HIM, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, FREELY OR GRACIOUSLY OR BENEFICIALLY IN GRACE GIVE TO US from the Justice of God THE ALL THINGS as temporal blessing, He DOES. (ALL Grace Blessings in time)

- i. **God is trying to give to us “all things”, and what holds up the gift is our failure to UNDERSTAND Doctrine, and advance in the Spiritual Life but sooner or later in eternity he will do it.**
 - ii. In time we have the wonderful privilege of demonstrating the glory of God and the perfection of his plan by exploiting grace to the maximum and this is the overall design of election.
10. We use a variety of Human Viewpoint applications to make friends in life, catering to and providing approbation for others in order to make them friends so they will like us.
 - i. This whole system will collapse without the true basis for friendship and love which is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - ii. GRACE CAPACITY is only accomplished by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. Many people cannot make friends because of Arrogance and many having discovered something about others want to only compete and this is ARROGANCE.
 - iv. Arrogant people have no capacity for love ever, and having friends who are arrogant they will never be true friends having no capacity for life of any kind.
 - v. It is god’s purpose for each of us to have friends and loved ones in this life and this is part of election.
 - vi. Capacity for love and life is something God provided for us in ELECTION by providing Bible Doctrine for us to give capacity.
11. When a person is free from PRIDE (Arrogance) they are stable people.
 - i. When a person who has pride has pressure put on that pride it compresses and explodes and up comes a variety of Mental Attitude Sins especially its counterpart of jealousy.
 - ii. Jealousy is never seen until pressure is put on the pride and with this pressure there also comes vindictiveness, implacability and even more Mental Attitude Sins.
 - iii. This prevents arrogant people from having love in their souls.
 - iv. Pride sometimes has as its counterpart hypersensitivity and self centeredness.
 - v. To the extent that this balance of pride and other Mental Attitude Sins exists to that extent there can be no capacity for LOVE in any category.
 - vi. Election will therefore make incredible changes in the life of the believer once he begins to understand it.

Col 3:12

v12: Put on, therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved put on the affections of heart, a right lobe of affections of grace compassion, capacity for love, a gracious disposition leading to generosity, a Mental Attitude of grace, meekness or freedom from arrogance {and} steadfastness or stability.

- K. Objective of Election in time is to encourage the believer to attain the life in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. **Eph 4:1**
 1. Many believers do not walk according to their station in life.

2. Believers in the Church Age are Royalty, ETERNAL ROYALTY and very very few walk as worthy of that station.
3. This demands the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and relating Election to our experience of Life.
4. We are ELECTED into the station of Royal Family of God and election relates the Plan of God from Eternity Past to our experience in life in time.

2Tim 1:13-14, Tit 1:1

L. The election of Jewish Believers:

1. Jews in the Church Age are considered to have been neglected by God in some way.
 - i. This is false.
2. The Jews are out under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline and this is a CURSE to the Jews but in the Church Age cursing for the Jews is turned into great blessing by Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
3. This makes the Jew also a member of the Royal Family of God and in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **Rom 11:1-7, (1Kings 19:10)**
4. In every generation there is always a remnant according to the “ELECTION OF GRACE” and just because we don’t know any of them does not mean they do not exist.
5. This remnant of Super Grace believers hold up the generation just as we do as always.
6. Racial Israel is seeking messiah but having rejected Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ they have no salvation BUT the elected ones of Israel have attained it but the rest are hardened in reversionism.
7. In every generation in the Church Age there will always be a Jewish election of those who are believers and move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

M. Election is used for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace of the Tribulation. **Matt 24:21-**

1. This is the remnant according to the Election in the Tribulation that being of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
2. Because of these Super Grace believers the whole trend of history is changed in the tribulation.

II. The great issue of v9:

- A. God has a plan for our lives since the day of our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
1. This plan calls for great blessing in our life and if we are missing that blessing it is because we have missed the entire plan.
 2. The key to the Plan of God for our life is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 3. There is no way for the Plan of God to advance in your life without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your soul and this cannot occur unless you are functioning under the Grace Apparatus for Perception consistently and daily.
 4. There is NO place for us to do anything in the process of advancing in the Spiritual Life.

B. Exposing yourself to Bible Doctrine consistently and daily may be thought of as “DOING SOMETHING”; But this is NOT to be construed as WORKS or WORKING for spirituality or Spiritual Maturity.

1. Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine will change your thinking in order to orient your thinking to GRACE, this is not works, nor Human Good.
2. By exposing yourself to Bible Doctrine consistently you are NOT under the principle of Human Good or Works but under the principle of the Grace Plan of God. **Eph 2:8-9,**

C. With regard to salvation the only way to approach the cross and Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross is by FAITH through GRACE.

1. He did all the work of salvation and FINISHED it all with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all SINS.
2. At the same time Human Good and Evil were rejected as the plan of Satan and that which is produced by the Old Sin Nature.

3. As we approach the cross for salvation we must understand that SALVATION Work is Finished by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
- D. SINCE it is obviously finished, What can we add to it???
1. NOTHING and why we are told to BELIEVE in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which is NONMERITORIOUS THINKING totally without merit and NOT WORKS.
 2. The object of Faith is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who has all the merit.
 3. No feelings, emotions, nor any other thing we can do is ever part of Salvation.
- E. NOW After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we find ourselves still alive on this earth in the world ruled by Satan.
1. We are now very often told that we must help God and hustle and do things to maintain our salvation or gain spirituality.
 2. Faith is THINKING, Non meritorious Thinking, WHAT MAKES ANY OF US THINK THIS WILL CHANGE?
 3. It is the soul which is the battleground for the Angelic Conflict not that which is in our periphery.
 4. People say and think after salvation when things get tough “The Devil is After ME!!!” this is our periphery not our soul.
 5. If the car breaks down and the plumbing stops up then this is the Angelic Conflict and demons after us.
 6. Traffic, the school, the office, at home is not the battleground for the Angelic Conflict it is the SOUL and our THINKING.
 7. We must have something with which to think and the only thing needed is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- F. There is a place for doing and production in the Spiritual Life but it must be based on the balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
1. We never start in the Spiritual Life by “DOING” things for God but by learning who and what the lord is, orientation to grace, understanding God and developing a capacity for LIFE in every category all which means the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine.
 2. The best thing you can do in the Spiritual Life is SIT still and listen and take in the word.
- G. Our salvation therefore is NOT of works on our part neither is our ELECTION which was done by God totally billions of years ago in Eternity Past.
1. How can you ADD to the provision of God which he put aside in Eternity Past.
 2. If we have great wealth, promotion or success at some time in our life this was part of the Plan of God for our blessings of Super Grace.
 3. What can we add to this?
 4. We cannot add anything at all.
 5. There never was, nor will be a blessing, temporal, spiritual, historical in your periphery which was not all together take care of and provided in Eternity Past.
 6. How can we ever think we are going to work in time for something we had and were given billions of years ago in Eternity Past.
- H. For all believers in the Church Age God has a GRACE plan for their lives and there is no place for Human Good, legalism, human ability, merit, planning, self effacement, no place for taboos etc.
1. God has a predetermined plan for each of us and as we grow in the Spiritual Life and move toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God this plan unfolds for us in terms of BLESSING, Ability to handle any situation in life or any disaster.

2Tim 1:9

v9: **This one, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who, in 1 instant of time, has eternally saved us at our making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus Christ alone, the one having in the past called or invited or elected us to the privileges and benefits of Grace as Royal Family of God who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which continues into the present, into a holy station of life set apart, NOT EVER UNDER ANY**

CIRCUMSTANCES according to our works or productions but according to his own privately possessed prefabricated or predetermined plan even GRACE which has been given to us in Christ Jesus before Human History,

Lesson #12 Series # 469 2Tim 1:9

- I. Election connects us as believers to the predetermined plan from Eternity Past and the divine decree.
 - A. This plan is for EACH and everyone of us as believers and was set in stone LONG before anything existed.
 - B. Grace is a simple title for the Plan of God:
 1. It is not only the principle of the Plan of God but the title, concept, mechanics and everything involving the Plan of God.
- II. Doctrine of GRACE:
 - A. It is an oversimplification of GRACE to define it as “unmerited favor”.
 - B. Definition:
 1. Grace is all that God if free to do for man, each of us, on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 2. It is god’s freedom and consistency to express his love toward mankind without jeopardy to his essence
 - i. The Essence of God:
 - a. Sovereignty
 - b. Absolute Righteousness
 - c. Absolute Justice
 - d. Absolute LOVE
 - e. Eternal Life
 - f. Omniscience
 - g. Omnipotence
 - h. Omnipresence
 - i. Immutability
 - j. Veracity
 3. Grace is the expression of the Love of God BUT if God is going to express his love as in John 3:16 “God loved the world so much he gave his uniquely born son”, his love must be consistent with the rest of his essence because Immutability says he cannot change his essence
 4. God cannot be flexible in any way to LOVE any of us, we are imperfect creatures and born with an Old Sin Nature and have condemnation from Adam’s Original Sin and commit personal sin as well therefore the Love of God cannot be directed toward us without some sort of mechanism to prevent compromise to the Essence of God.
 - i. With God having Absolute Righteousness he has a problem in trying to love us without compromise to the Righteousness of God and Justice of God.
 5. The answer begins at the cross and Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ where God was propitiated by this sacrifice.
 - i. The Justice of God and Righteousness of God were satisfied with the work of Christ on the cross therefore God is now able to come through the GRACE pipeline to us without compromise to the Justice of God or Righteousness of God because of propitiation.
 6. A second problem is that God must be free to bless us, to provide Eternal Life and provide salvation and God is NOT free to do this unless certain provisions are made to NOT compromise his essence or character.
 - i. We as humans can LOVE and compromise our character but GOD cannot he being perfect and we being imperfect.
 - ii. We can love people and bend or compromise a little here or there but God cannot and would not be God if he did.
 - iii. We all love to some degree sentimentally but God cannot stoop to sentimentality without compromise to his essence because he is immutable.

- iv. He must be free to himself to give us the blessing which will glorify him in the Angelic Conflict.
7. Therefore GRACE in definition is very complex and the oversimplification of grace fails to recognize the character and Essence of God and the problems in relationship with his character.
 - i. It is extremely important that we recognize these things
 - a. We are saved by Grace
 - b. We are sustained by living or Logistical Grace
 - c. We will reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo if we persist.
 8. Grace is the freedom of God to express his love to mankind without any compromise or jeopardy to his essence or character.
 - i. NO one can truly give or rightly give apart from freedom.
 - ii. Any time you give under pressure of some sort this is not true giving.
 - iii. This giving applies to MUCH MORE than money and you cannot give of self, love or anything else unless you are totally free to do so.
 - iv. This is also true with reference to God as well but to an even greater extent.
 - v. He must be free to give us anything and everything.
 - vi. His sovereignty must be coordinated with is love, in love he wants to give and he can decide through his sovereignty to give but this must not be compromised by his justice or righteousness.
 - vii. This is not the case in the GRACE system.
 - viii. God does give out of total freedom under Grace because of propitiation from the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 9. ***Grace is the Plan of God on behalf of man beginning at the cross and is the Plan of God and policy of God with regard to mankind and therefore Grace is a Plan, Policy, Mechanic of divine Modus Operandi and under grace God does all the work and providing while man does all the receiving and benefiting, NONE of which he earns, deserves or merits.***
 10. The concept of Grace obviously depends on who and what God is, God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.
 - i. Grace is what God can do for man and still be consistent with his essence.
 - ii. Grace is the relationship of God with the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the way of salvation.
 - iii. Grace is all that God can do for man from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Eternity totally apart from man's ability, talent, merit, planning, or concepts.
 11. Grace is the absolute Genius of God and Bible Doctrine is the manifestation of that genius revealed to us.
 - i. It takes a great deal of Bible Doctrine before we really begin to comprehend GRACE.
 12. The true issue is that there is an enemy of grace and it is Legalism which is man's intrusion into the Plan of God with his works, thinking, ability, plans, schemes and talents.
 - i. The believer must learn to distinguish between GRACE and Legalism.
 - ii. The believer often clings to his abilities or talents or plans or gimmicks and seeks to infiltrate this into the Plan of God.
 - iii. This is people who try to appeal to God by various efforts on their own part such as Giving money, time or talent or living a clean and moral life, thinking it will bring blessing from heaven.
 - iv. There is no way to coerce or bribe God for blessings and God must be free to give you blessings and this freedom for God comes by you living the Super Grace life and having the capacity to appreciate what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is and did and the things provided as well.

13. Grace cannot be neutralized or compromised because it rejects human abilities, talents, plans, viewpoint ideas therefore it cannot coexist with Legalism.
 - i. There is a total exclusion of legalism by grace and vice versa.
 - ii. We must be alert to exclude anything that is legalistic from our life and this requires constant consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

C. Paragraph I of Grace and the New Contract to the church:

1. The church is the Royal Family of God and therefore is not under the contracts of the Old Testament Scripture
2. The glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by resurrection, ascension and session is the strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict and this dramatic victory interrupted the Age of Israel in order that the Royal Family of God might be formed to complement this victory.
3. The Royal Family of God is formed by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit in the Church Age.
4. The new contract to the church is related to Bible Doctrine in the field of sanctification.
5. Grace found a way to take man who was created inferior to angels and make him superior and it is accomplished by the 3 phases of sanctification:
 - i. Positional Sanctification – the greatest thing God the Father could ever do for any of us is to make believers exactly like his son Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. This is accomplished through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and positional truth at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God where we are put into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. All Old Testament Scripture believers were regenerated by God the Holy Spirit but in the Church Age we have more than that from God the Holy Spirit.
6. God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for the believer in the Church Age does at least 5 things for us.
 - i. One is the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit whereby he enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for the first time at the day of Pentecost and will not happen after the rapture of the church.
 - ii. This is not something we experience or feel it is simply God the Holy Spirit entering us as believers into union with Christ.
 - iii. This forms the Royal Family of God and it is totally apart from our works or merit.
7. Salvation is totally apart from our human merit, propitiation, reconciliation, redemption all without anything we can DO for any part of this.
 - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone this effort of volition which is without merit we receive 39 irrevocable assets and Filling of God the Holy Spirit all of which have nothing to do with our MERIT.
 - ii. We do not earn nor deserve anything which is done for us at Faith Alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - iii. Adam lost control of the world to Satan through his transgression and fall where as Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ regained control of the world through is Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross and strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict.
8. Believers who are in union with Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit therefore have 2 factors of grace
 - i. Positionally all Church Age believers are HIGHER than angels
 - ii. Positionally all Church Age believers are Royal Family of God forever.
 - iii. At the session of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Resurrection Body at the right hand of God the Father he was HIGHER than angels
 - iv. More than that he is King of Kings and Lord of Lords, battlefield royalty and we are called out in the Church Age to be his Royal Family.

- v. We do not earn nor deserve these 2 grace factors resulting from our position in Christ.
- vi. We are positionally higher than angels and part of the Royal Family of God.
- vii. This is not EXPERIENTIAL but positional for us in time in this life.
- viii. Eventually we will be higher and physically greater than angels when we receive our Resurrection Body.
- ix. In addition we being Royalty are envied by all angels if they are capable of envy.
- 9. The entrance paragraph into the new contract for the Church Age is Positional Sanctification.
 - i. It provides for royalty and that each member of the Royal Family of God is higher than the angels which we do not earn nor deserve.
- 10. The Royal Family of God also possess the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit which is our royal escutcheon the sign of our royalty.
- D. Paragraph 2 of Grace and the new contract for the Church Age:
 - 1. (New Testament is an erroneous translation or description of the book of our bible since testament is something which requires DEATH to be initiated. These new books are is a new contract or covenant for the church.)
 - 2. Experiential Sanctification is also strictly grace provision.
 - 3. God in his Grace Plan has provided numerous things for our tactical victory in the Church Age:
 - i. Living or Logistical Grace by which we are kept alive in the world of Satan and we do not earn nor deserve this.
 - a. Our clothing, transportation, food and shelter are all based on the grace provision for our life by God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher provided for us to learn Bible Doctrine and direct our advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorification of God.
 - a. Personality conflicts should not be the reason for a person leaving a local church EVER.
 - b. Leaving the local church a believer should never create a fuss of any kind and never malign the Pastor Teacher.
 - c. Leaving a local church because of lack of Bible Doctrine teaching is acceptable if the believer goes quietly and is therefore free to go elsewhere.
 - d. All facets of Grace are related to authority and no matter how incompetent or bad a Pastor Teacher might be he is the authority in his local church and we have no right to challenge that authority.
 - e. NEVER violate the principles of Grace by attacking another Pastor Teacher.
 - iii. In addition God has provided the local church for the classroom and the preserved bible as a text book or whatever means we may need to acquire the teaching of Bible Doctrine from a qualified Pastor Teacher.
 - iv. These factors are provided for every generation:
 - a. Pastor Teachers which change from time to time and generation to generation.
 - i) Great pastors die or become apostate for whatever reason and new pastors constantly are emerging to establish new local churches.
 - b. Local churches which change from time to time and generation to generation.
 - i) Great churches of the past can degenerate and become apostate and places where there were NO local churches can have great ones sprout up.
 - c. Canon of Scripture of Bible Doctrine which remains static.

- d. These 3 things are the only essential things needed for the believer to grow in the Spiritual Life from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - v. With these 3 factors for spiritual growth in the Church Age there is also a system of great authority.
 - a. The authority first resides in Bible Doctrine
 - b. The authority of the Pastor Teacher is based on his effective teaching of Bible Doctrine to his congregation.
- 4. There is also a Grace System of Perception to learn Bible Doctrine.
 - i. In our soul we have a Grace Apparatus for Perception from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. We have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit and resuscitation of a human spirit and a system in our soul whereby we can take in Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. If the intake of Bible Doctrine depended on your IQ this would be legalism and human ability.
 - iv. Those with Low IQ can take in Bible Doctrine as readily as those who have a HIGH IQ.
 - v. Therefore spiritual growth can be accomplished with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, the Grace Apparatus for Perception, the Bible Doctrine preserved, the Pastor Teacher teaching and the local church in which to assemble for learning.
- 5. The perpetuation of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to the point of death where by we receive blessings in dying under Dying Grace is all part of the grace plan of God.
- 6. Living or Logistical Grace is everything needed to perpetuate us in time and allow us to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorify God in time provided under this system.
- 7. Experiential sanctification is the attainment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and perpetuation of Status Quo Super Grace through constant Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - i. This is a tactical victory which complements the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ whereby it is possible for each of us in the world of Satan to glorify God.
 - ii. All this is provided in GRACE.
- 8. Consistent and constant Positive Volition by the believer WILL move him toward and into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. This will bring to us 5 categories of blessing for time and moving into eternity.
 - a. The receipt of these blessings is what glorifies God in time.
- 9. There are those who enter into Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and then revert to Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and 8 stages of reversionism.
 - i. With regard to this we MUST understand that Satan has a plan of pseudo blessing and reward whereby his LOVES to reward believers.
 - ii. He gives them prosperity of one form or another but whatever he uses to reward the reversionist in any field the lord then uses that reward to make this believer MISERABLE and this is part of Divine Discipline to convert satanic rewards into misery.
 - iii. Many believers in reversionism are often in some field of prosperity which gives them a sense of growing in the Spiritual Life when in reality they are being blessed by Satan who as ruler of this world has plenipotentiary powers by which he is able to reward both the unbeliever and believer.
 - iv. God WILL use rewards from Satan in time as a means of Divine Discipline.
 - v. Many believers get into this trap and think they are moving into Super Grace when instead Satan has just promoted you.
- 10. Super Grace blessings are GRACE given and glorify God in time.

11. Experiential sanctification is the balance of residence of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- E. Paragraph 3 of Grace and the new contract for the Church Age:
1. Ultimate Sanctification which is the receipt of the Resurrection Body for all eternity exactly like that of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ becoming physically superior to angels forever.
 - i. This occurs at completion of the Royal Family of God and the Rapture or Exit Resurrection of the church.
 - ii. After this rapture there will be the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ where the Royal Family of God is evaluated based on Divine Good vs Human Good.
 - iii. All the believers of the Church Age after the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ will have a Resurrection Body and those who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, and those who continue to move on to Ultra Super Grace in addition will have incredible blessings and rewards for eternity.
 - iv. At this point God the Father has accomplished the ultimate in making the believer just like his son, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 2. We start with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and then move to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as did Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, and there is conformity in that we go from glory to glory as we possess the same Super Grace as Christ did before he went to the cross.
 3. Ultimately we will receive our Resurrection Body exactly like that of the lord.
- F. Five stages of the Grace plan of God:
1. Salvation Grace:
 - i. Every believer has tasted the Grace of God at least once **Heb 6:4, 1Pet 2:3**
 - ii. This is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God where we receive 39 irrevocable assets which cannot be destroyed or revoked.
 - iii. Because of propitiation every believer comes under the maximum Love of God which causes him to pour out maximum grace. **1John 2:2**
 - iv. Grace can only be a benefit to the believer where there is capacity for Grace Blessings
 - v. Capacity for Grace is based on the amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - vi. This is all the trinity has done for salvation of man:
 - a. God the Father planned it
 - b. God the Son executed it
 - c. God the Holy Spirit empowered and revealed it. **Rom 3:23-24, 4:4**
 2. Living Grace or Logistical Grace:
 - i. All God is free to do for the believer to keep him alive in time during the appeal trial phase of the Angelic Conflict in order to provide opportunity for advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorification of God.
 - ii. These include the means of concentration, self and academic discipline, thoughtfulness, poise, all from Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
 - iii. For the negative believer and the one in reversionism God provides a GRACE system of incredible Divine Discipline to reorient the believer to the Plan of God.
 3. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in time. **1Tim 1:14**
 - i. This is the adult stage of life on earth for the believer.
 - ii. It is the ultimate in spiritual growth in time and the basis for the normal function of the royal priesthood and where production of the royal ambassadorship of the believer becomes effective.
 - iii. It is the state of life in which the Royal Family of God reaps what God has sowed in Eternity Past **Rom 8:28**
 - iv. Super Grace is described in **James 4:6, Eph 1:6, 3:20-21,**

- v. God pursues us with GRACE and gives on the basis of the riches of his glory for us to become STRONG that is reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- 4. Dying Grace is for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or beyond only.
 - i. The person under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine goes out of this life under the Sin Unto Death a horrible painful miserable death.
 - a. This is the last time God has to discipline the Negative Volition believer.
 - ii. Dying grace is the death of the believer who is consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and is the last time for God to BLESS the believer in time.
 - a. It is the greatest blessing experience in life for the positive believer.
 - b. It is the experience of physical death under special grace provision whereby death becomes a tremendous blessing.
 - c. This links the Super Grace believer of time with the surpassing grace believer of eternity.
 - iii. This is an extension of the whole principle of grace and we cannot earn or deserve great blessing in dying but it comes to those in Super Grace through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Phil 1:20-21**

Phil 1:20

v20: According to my earnest expectation; (waiting calmly and humbly under authority and orders, and intense concentration on Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception focusing on Bible Doctrine taught); and resultant confidence expectation that in nothing, (in the various aspects of life), shall I be put to shame or disgraced, but with integrity of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Royal Family Honor Code resulting in courage, confidence and total relaxation toward God, even now being in Super-Grace B, as always Ultra Super-Grace, and in all stages of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, THE unique Christ shall be magnified or exalted in my person alive on earth in time, whether by my living in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or by my dying under dying grace.

v21: For you see, or As I, Paul in Super-Grace B, see it, for me, as far as I am concerned, Living or to continue living, is (ellipsis) Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ; likewise dying is unusual Gain, great Profit, Riches of Glory, Magnetism beyond life in eternity.

- 5. Surpassing Grace which is the special blessings and rewards for believer for all eternity based on their Status Quo of spiritual advance.
 - i. These are rewards above and beyond any normal blessings which come to any believer in heaven and are comprised of many variations up to and including special decorations and wreaths for the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond. **Eph 2:7**
- G. The Motivational Virtue of Grace:
 - 1. It is a means of Growth **2Pet 3:18**
 - 2. It is the basis for stability **Heb 13:9,, 1Pet 5:12, Heb 12:28**
 - 3. It is the basis for production **1Cor 16:10, 2Cor 6:1**
- H. Failure to use Grace:
 - 1. Reversionism is the failure to utilize grace
 - i. It is called drifting off course from Grace **Gal 5:4**
 - ii. Misery by association **Heb 12:15**
- I. Grace and Suffering:
 - 1. There is no tragedy or disaster or heartache in life too great for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace: **2Cor 12:7-10, 1Pet etc,**
- J. Axioms of Grace:
 - 1. God is perfect his plan is perfect
 - 2. A perfect plan can only originate and function from a perfect source, GOD
 - 3. If man can do anything meritorious in the Plan of God it is NO LONGER perfect.
 - i. Man being imperfect therefore if he can do anything in the Plan of God it neutralizes the plan never advancing it.

4. A plan is no stronger than its weakest link and there are NO WEAK LINKS in the Grace Plan of God.
 5. Grace excludes all human merit, ability, good, legalism, Self Righteous, arrogance and Legalism
 6. Legalism is the enemy of grace and there is no place for legalism in the Plan of God.
 7. All legalism and Human Good is associated with arrogance or pride and Arrogance is also the great enemy of Grace.
- K. 4 Areas in which Arrogance rejects grace.
1. The pride of the believer who rejects Eternal Security
 - i. To reject Eternal Security you have to be the most arrogant person in the world and he thinks his sins are greater than the Grace of God.
 2. ***Pride of the believer who succumbs to the pressures of his ADVERSITIES thinking his suffering and adversities are greater than the Plan of God. 2Cor 12:7***
 3. Pride of the reversionist who assumes his reversionism is greater than Super Grace blessings and that the pseudo blessings of Satan are greater than anything God can provide until he is face to face with death he never gives doctrine a single thought.
 4. Pride of pseudo spirituality where the believer thinks his energy of the flesh, efforts or works for spirituality are greater than the true function of God the Holy Spirit in the life.
 - i. In arrogance he becomes involved as a holy roller tongues, or with taboo-ism, or various categories of legalism.
- L. The believer is the beneficiary of Grace in time but it has been provided for him from Eternity Past.
1. It starts with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and continues through is life while he remains consistent in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond into eternity.
 2. As a result of his daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and God providing Logistical Grace and right Pastor Teacher and local church and preserving scripture he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and THIS and only THIS glorifies God.
 3. Here in this passage of v9 these believers are Paul and Timothy.
- M. This makes it obvious that:
1. If God for us who against us?
 2. God has a plan which is perfect and in which we function as believers in the Royal Family of God.
 3. This plan results in so many great wonderful things related to our personal life and history as well.

2Tim 1:9

v9: **This one, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who, in 1 instant of time, has eternally saved us at our making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus Christ alone, the one having in the past called or invited or elected us to the privileges and benefits of Grace as Royal Family of God who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which continues into the present, into a holy station of life set apart, NOT EVER UNDER ANY CIRCUMSTANCES according to our works or productions but according to his own privately possessed prefabricated or predetermined plan even GRACE which has been given to us in Christ Jesus before the times of the ages or dispensations, before Human History began.**

Lesson #13 Series # 469 2Tim 1:10

- I. Strategic Victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
 - A. In order to accomplish this victory Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had to become a member of the Human Race and appear on this earth.
 - B. The Plan of God has been prepared in Eternity Past as part of the divine decree by God the Father and revealed in time by the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 1. The whole key to the divine decree is that in Eternity Past God the Son agreed to become human and come into the world.

2. There then was the elapse of “time” in Eternity Past and then after the initial creation of angelic beings and the universe and then a lapse again in angelic history before man was created and then several thousand years before the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was to occur.
 - i. The entire detailed Plan of God for the 1st advent and all provisions for God the Son in Hypostatic Union was made in Eternity Past.
3. There is a parallel in this in that at some point in your life you decided to express faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone and yet the provision for your life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God was totally made in Eternity Past.
 - i. God the Father knew all about us in Eternity Past who and what we would become and all of our successes and failures and provided for us in Eternity Past for both our life in time and in eternity.
 - ii. This provision is fulfilled in time beginning at our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and continuing through our lifetime and death and then continuing into eternity future.
4. The Plan of God was prepared for us in Eternity Past as part of the divine decree but was only revealed in time beginning with the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the virgin birth.

C. The question of TIME:

1. Since everything we are ever to get was provided in Eternity Past then “why pray”? Since every blessing we are ever to receive was provided in Eternity Past in the divine decree then “why mention it to God and therefore what is the purpose of prayer petition”
2. Since God did the same for others then “why bother to pray for them”
3. Is prayer a waste of time or is it god’s sense of humor keeping us occupied since it is all provided already?
4. The ANSWER: Part of the provision and blessing and the rest of it includes the prayers which were understood in Eternity Past also and every prayer which was going to be answered was answered in Eternity Past.
 - i. IF they were answerable prayer.
 - ii. Many prayers get through to God and many many more and totally insignificant and don’t even get the attention or recognition of God.
5. Cognizance of all prayers were considered in Eternity Past and the making of the divine decree.
6. All prayer, which is answered, was answered in Eternity Past, and this should not discourage prayer but encourage it and maybe it will improve the QUALITY of the prayers we send.
 - i. If the quality is good then God took cognizance of that as well and many things in life are held up as God waited in Eternity Past for the quality of our prayers to improve and get through to him.
7. God has a time table for all of the things in our life and only our failures can delay what he WANTED us to have but it was all entered into the divine decree in Eternity Past.

D. God’s timing is PERFECT and there is no better timing and it is the only time table in which to operate.

1. This was a problem that Abram had as he kept trying to push blessings his way and tried many Human Viewpoint solutions but these only postponed the blessings.
2. Consequently the blessing was held up by his own efforts to fulfill the promises.

E. The problem of the varied appearances of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

1. Here the appearance of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ refers to the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
2. There are 4 categories of appearance of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:
 - i. Theophany:
 - a. This is the appearance of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Old Testament Scripture in many ways:

- b. Malak JHWH or Angel of Jehovah and these include any appearance of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ before the 1st advent.
 - i) This must be distinguished from Christophany
 - c. As a man visiting: Abraham in his tent, Wrestling Jacob disabling him for life,
 - d. This appearance of the lord was discontinued after the 1st advent.
 - e. As natural phenomenon as the Cloud, the Pillar of Fire, the Burning Bush.
 - f. As the Shekinah Glory which rested between the Cherubs of the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant.
- ii. 1st Advent:
- a. When salvation was accomplished which is the reference here.
 - b. This is virgin conceived and born Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union for 33 years.
 - c. Here he received 2 types of royalty:
 - i) At the beginning of the 1st advent he received Jewish royalty being born from Mary descended from Nathan, David's Son.
 - ii) At the end of the 1st advent he received Battlefield royalty for the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict.
 - iii) These give the lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ authority over Israel and the Church which are the ONLY 2 organizations in Human History which have a spiritual connotation.
- iii. Christophany:
- a. All occurred after the 1st advent with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union appearing in Resurrection Body
 - i) His deity is not seen but his humanity is seen in a Resurrection Body.
 - b. Some of these while he was on earth:
 - i) Mary Magdalene
 - ii) Other women
 - iii) Peter on Sunday afternoon,
 - iv) Disciples on the road to Amais
 - v) To 10 then 11 then 7 and to 500 believers at one time
 - vi) Then to James his brother
 - vii) Then to the 11 on the mount of Galilee.
 - viii) Then at the Ascension
 - c. After his ascension to:
 - i) To Stephen at his martyrdom
 - ii) Paul on the road to Damascus
 - iii) Paul in Arabia
 - iv) Paul in the Temple
 - v) Paul in prison
 - vi) John on the island of Patmos
- iv. 2nd Advent:
- a. See the Armageddon series
3. The objective of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union at the 1st advent was the setting up of the potential for salvation for mankind.
- i. Redemption
 - ii. Reconciliation
 - iii. Propitiation
- F. Christos == Christ == This is dealing with the order of the royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he is Jewish Royalty before battlefield royalty of the Church Age.
- 1. This represents the Jewish royalty since Christos == Messiah == the one commissioned or anointed KING as David was before him.
 - 2. Kurios is not here and is for divine royalty or LORD.

3. Jesus == Savior == Battlefield royalty referring to the cross and the subsequent events which took place in the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came to defeat Satan by the cross, his death, resurrection, ascension and Session which gave him a battlefield royal title of King of Kings and Lord of Lords.
- G. Under the doctrine of Expiation Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ released mankind from association with spiritual death.
1. We were BORN into this life in association with spiritual death from possession of the genetic Old Sin Nature and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to us at birth.
 2. We are born without any fellowship with God and released from this association with spiritual death by the revelation and work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 3. This spiritual death has been made useless, powerless and which we have been released from association with.
 4. Adam was warned of the penalty of transgressing God's mandates as DEATH but this is spiritual death, **Rom 6:23** says the "wages of sin is Death" is referring also to Spiritual death.
 5. "While we were yet sinners Christ died for us" is totally misunderstood by most individuals because they MUST understand the spiritual death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ first.
 6. The spiritual death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ provided the potential for our salvation based on our use of our own volition to choose it.
 7. On the cross in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ released us from the condemnation and penalties of sin. **Rom 8:1, Heb 9:27-28**
 8. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ took away sin of mankind by bearing our personal sins and accepting judgment and punishment of Spiritual Death for them thereby disassociating US from the penalty of Sin which is spiritual death.
 9. *Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came in Hypostatic Union at the 1st advent to provide for us Eternal Salvation by disassociating us with the Old Sin Nature and spiritual death with which we are born.*
- H. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ illuminates for us Eternal Life and Immortality.
1. The cross illuminates Eternal Life
 2. The resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ illuminates immortality
- I. Eternal Life **1John 5:11-12, John 1:4, 14:6, 20:31**
1. It was always there but we cannot see it until the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- J. Immortality is resurrection **1Cor 15:33**
- K. Principle:
1. The gospel is the means of communicating the work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross plus his resurrection, ascension and session.
 2. It communicates the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict and the way of salvation for mankind.
 3. As a result of the 1st advent and the strategic victory of the cross we have the Angelic Conflict shifting into the MOST INTENSE phase of the Angelic Conflict.
 - i. The tribulation is the MOST INTENSE phase of Human History.
 4. The Church Age is therefore the most intensified phase of the Angelic Conflict and the Royal Family of God is being formed on the battlefield of the Angelic Conflict.
 5. While the tribulation will have more concentrated adversity the Church Age will have more intensified spiritual conflict.
- L. If all the objectives of the revelation of the 1st advent are to be accomplished THERE MUST BE COMMUNICATION.
1. No communication means no illumination.
 2. No believer has ever on his own ever picked up anything from scripture and was able to us it with the exception of those with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.

3. The believer is supposed to learn everything about Bible Doctrine from the teaching of a qualified Pastor Teacher under strict academic discipline and total concentration.
4. It is discipline which is essential for the advance of the believer in the Spiritual Life.
5. In our time we have a communicator of Bible Doctrine which is ONLY the Pastor Teacher.

II. Communication to the Royal Family of God or how illumination through communication makes it possible for you to understand the spiritual life and Plan of God.

A. Principles:

1. The strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ brings the Age of Israel to a screeching halt 10 days after the ascension.
 2. With Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ seated at the right hand of God the Father he was appointed battlefield royalty from the unseen Angelic Conflict.
 3. In this category of royalty Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has a title of King of Kings and Lord of Lords but is without a royal family.
 - i. He has as divine royalty a royal family including God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.
 - ii. He has as Jewish royalty the lineage of David and his contemporary brothers and sisters.
 - iii. At the ascension and session however he was without a royal family for his battlefield royalty.
 4. Therefore being without a royal family the Age of Israel is halted and the Church Age is begun to call out a Royal Family of God for the battlefield royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 5. The interruption of the Age of Israel to from the Royal Family of God demands the communication of Bible Doctrine to that Royal Family of God the Church Age believer.
 6. Therefore 3 categories emerge from the completed canon of scripture:
 - i. Communicator – the Pastor Teacher who is responsible for teaching Bible Doctrine to the Royal Family of God during the Church Age.
 - a. No prophets nor apostles exists after completion of the canon of scripture
 - ii. Reversionistic Believer 2Tim 1:15 who is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - a. The great issue of the Church Age is attitude toward Bible Doctrine it is not surprising that all categories of believers who resist Bible Doctrine are found under this principle of reversionism.
 - iii. Believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who is consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and continues to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 7. All categories demand the transfer of Bible Doctrine from the scripture to the soul of the believer.
 - i. The communicator can learn by reading and studying but began his learning by hearing from a Pastor Teacher of his own long before he has his own church and congregation and long before he is aware of his spiritual gift.
 - ii. Believers in the congregation learn by hearing under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - a. Those under Negative Volition who neglect or reject Bible Doctrine cannot and do not grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and live under constant Divine Discipline.
 8. This can only be accomplished by authorized communicators.
 9. Authorized communication is based on the possession of the pertinent communication gift today which is Pastor Teacher.
 - i. Paul had Pastor Teacher and Apostleship
- B. There is NO SUCH THING as a PREACHER and preacher means shouting:
1. (gr) 'Keruzz' is a herald or communicator for the king

2. The king is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the Pastor Teacher is the ONE who communicates for royalty.
- C. In the Church Age there are 2 periods of function:
1. Precanon
 - i. 30 to 96 AD
 - ii. Pastor Teachers and Apostles
 2. Post Canon
 - i. 96 AD to the rapture of the church.
 - ii. Pastor Teacher only
- D. (gr) 'Didaskolos' == a communicator to a group of people where the group has no authority and the Pastor Teacher has all the authority.
1. With his spiritual gift the Pastor Teacher has the authority for communicating in a public assembly of the local church.
 2. The Pastor Teacher is a TEACHER in public to a group under strict academic discipline.
 3. He must have absolute authority and the objective of the teaching under this authority is so that you might grow in the Spiritual Life produce the Edification Complex of the Soul and eventually make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- E. (gr) 'Mathetes' == The one who learns Bible Doctrine under concentration and strict discipline
- i. The system of one believer on one believer is an intrusion on the privacy of the individual believer.
 - a. It violates the freedom of the believer and becomes a system of dictatorship through the various systems of bullying and overpowering leadership etc.
 - b. It becomes a system of personality pressure and promotion of pseudo spirituality forcing on the believer a system of gimmicks and pseudo spiritual functions.
 - c. It develops Human Viewpoint thinking and pseudo concepts of life whereby Satan becomes the blessing and the reversionistic believer the BLESSEE.
 - ii. ONLY the Pastor Teacher is to be the communicator of Bible Doctrine.
- F. God has made incredible GRACE provisions for each and everyone of us to learn Bible Doctrine:
1. The formation and preservation of the canon of scripture completed and preserved for 2000 years and having begun its formation some 3500 years ago.
 - i. This includes inspiration and protection of the written canon against all satanic attacks.
 2. The divine authorization of the local church:
 - i. Some local churches fail in every generation but God has never changed the system and the local church will be the only place to grow in the Spiritual Life until the rapture of the church occurs and the entire Royal Family of God are removed from this earth
 - ii. The local church is a classroom for learning Bible Doctrine and therefore a place for assembly for all believers.
 - iii. The concept of assembly challenges the volition of the believer who must make decisions to NOT recognize various excuses nor deterrents to attending bible class or engaging in bible study
 - iv. The Pastor Teacher is the ruler, the deacons are administrators in the local church and the congregation is to be benefited by the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - v. All worship is centered around learning Bible Doctrine and therefore discipline must be there.
 - vi. The Royal Family of God assembled in the local church are students without portfolio and this is a blessing in that the ONLY right the student in the local church has is to LEARN Bible Doctrine.

- vii. Continued existence of the local church is a product of the Grace of God in every generation.
3. A Right Pastor Teacher for every believer.
- i. It is not a matter of personality, rapport but only of content of message.
 - ii. Our job is to find our right Pastor Teacher and stick with him.
 - iii. There is no such thing as one Pastor Teacher who is better than another since the spiritual gift is identical for every pastor and the issue in our soul is to find OUR own right Pastor Teacher.
 - iv. You don't get involved with trade outs to listen to other Pastor Teachers and you don't bother to listen to ANY other Pastor Teacher but your own right Pastor Teacher.
 - v. This saves you all the problems of retrogression in the Spiritual Life and of the dangers of judging the correctness of the message of one over another.
 - vi. As a male believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you must get under your right Pastor Teacher and as you grow in the Spiritual Life you discover you either have or do not have the gift of Pastor Teacher.
 - vii. If you have the gift then you must make decisions for preparation of this spiritual gift function which are compatible with the Will of God for YOUR LIFE and that is all there is to it.
 - viii. There are no dedications nor overt commitments simply getting prepared if you have the gift or not.
 - ix. There is no such thing as a preacher and no Pastor Teacher is a preacher boy.
4. Royal priesthood of the believer in the Church Age:
- i. We are our own priest in the Church Age therefore as our own BOSS as to whether we are going to come to a local church or not is strictly our decision only.
 - ii. As a royal priest we are free to say yes or no to consistent availing of self for bible teaching.
 - iii. The alternatives should be very clear however.
 - iv. If you refuse to assemble, which is your right under your royal priesthood, this is a sign of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, then you must understand the alternative is a series of administrations of Divine Discipline which we cannot afford and most certainly not desire.
 - a. This includes Warning Divine Discipline, Intensive Divine Discipline and even Dying Divine Discipline.
 - b. This is open to every member of the Royal Family of God and each is free to choose to go this way.
 - v. Once a believer puts his volition into negative mode he bumps into another aspect of the Love of God whereby God the Father disciplines and skins alive with a whip every son whom he receives.
 - vi. Every believer must construct his own altar of Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - vii. The local congregation of the local church is an anonymous assembly but some of the greatest friends of your life will be made there.
 - viii. The local church is NOT a lonely hearts club.
5. Ministry of God the Holy Spirit whereby the aristocracy of the believer is related to this ministry.
- i. As we enter into Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit is responsible for doing 5 individual things for us.
 - ii. These things enter us into the Royal Family of God but also make it possible for us to take in Bible Doctrine consistently and continually.
6. Activation of the human spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God:
- i. At physical birth we are born into this world dichotomous and at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when we are 'born again' we become trichotomous.

- ii. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we have human body, human soul and human spirit.
 - iii. When the soul is saved at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the human spirit is added to the composition of mankind.
 - iv. Adam was created trichotomous and when he sinned he became dichotomous and when he accepted the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to come in the future he again became trichotomous.
 - v. We must have a human spirit as a processing point for Bible Doctrine **Rom 8:16-17**
 - vi. God the Holy Spirit therefore is able to communicate with the human spirit under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
7. The Laws of Divine Establishment for both believers and unbelievers.
- i. These guarantee freedom for believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment the Nation protects the freedom and privacy and property of the individual and the local church.
 - iii. This is the course of freedom through military victory all freedom which is secured and protected on the battlefield and from Law Enforcement functions.
 - iv. NO freedom ever comes from politicians who always destroy freedom.
 - v. Believers who reject authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment in any category will reject the authority of his Pastor Teacher and Bible Doctrine.
 - vi. The very function of the Laws of Divine Establishment brings both freedom and discipline needed for the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for the believer.
 - vii. WE are FREE therefore we can CHOOSE to enter a local church which puts us under the authority of the Pastor Teacher and under this freedom and authority we must have flexibility which produces self discipline which leads to capacity for life.

2Tim 1:10

v10: and now, at the present time Grace has become revealed or visible or manifest through the appearance of our Savior Christ Jesus, who, on the one hand, canceled, made useless, abrogated, wiped out, made ineffective and powerless, abolished, released us from association with death and He has, on the other hand, illuminated Eternal Life and Immortality through the gospel.

2Tim 1:11

v11: For which purpose there must be communicators for communicating Bible Doctrine for the tactical victory of the believer complementing the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the advance of the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this gospel I have been, in a momentary action by God the Holy Spirit, appointed a Herald of the King and Apostle and Pastor Teacher.

Lesson #14 Series # 469 2Tim 1:12

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. Thomas G. Kelly, Lt Cmdr., USN River Assault Division 152, Vietnam 15 June 1969.
 - B. Allan J. Kellogg Jr. GSgt., USMC, G Company, 2nd Battalion, 5th Marines, 1st Marine Division, Vietnam, 11 Mar 1970.
 - C. The proper use of the freedom secured by these men and many others is to engage consistently in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- II. Analogies to Deposits:
 - A. Evangelism
 - 1. In the ancient world there was a system of banking similar to what we have today.
 - 2. One type of bank was related to the Heathen Temples and these were all places where you could deposit money and the priests acted as bank tellers.
 - 3. Great merchant organizations also acted as bankers and you could carry a “letter or credit” from Rome to anywhere in the empire and receive cash in whatever amount you needed.

Acts 17:2-3

4. This is how commerce was carried on in the Roman Empire.
 5. Witnessing in the scripture is used for the function which occurred when testifying in a court and presenting truth and is used more for the function of the Pastor Teacher most of all.
 6. Witnessing is therefore a misnomer and it should be called personal or mass evangelism.
 7. In both there is the sense that the true concept of evangelism is to make a deposit of the gospel into the soul of the unbeliever(s).
 8. YOU HAVE NO PREROGATIVE TO GO BEYOND DEPOSITING GOSPEL INFORMATION IN THE SOUL OF THE INDIVIDUAL OR GROUP AND YOU HAVE NO AUTHORIZATION FOR PRESSING FOR A DECISION.
 9. It is God the Holy Spirit which makes the gospel reality and then bringing about the decision for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 10. God the Holy Spirit takes the deposit of the gospel in the soul of the unbeliever and uses it to bring about the compounding of interest in eternal salvation.
- B. Salvation and Eternal Security **2Tim 1:12**
1. Faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is also a deposit and occurs when we respond to the deposit of the gospel in our souls with Positive Volition.
 2. Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is the 2nd deposit and this faith deposit is totally dependent on the Essence of God regarding salvation thus Eternal Security is based on this.
 3. Approaches to Eternal Security:
 - i. Positional **Rom 8:38-39**
 - a. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and we cannot get out of this.
 - ii. Logical **Rom 8:32, 5:**
 - a. God has provided the most the greater difficulty in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ going to the cross and providing us with a salvation option through his Substitutionary Spiritual Death.
 - b. If this is the most then God can provide MUCH MORE than the most ie. Eternal Security. **Rom 5**
 - iii. Metaphorical Anthropomorphism of the Hand of God **John 10:28, Ps 27:34 (? 37:24)**
 - a. No one can snatch any believer from the hand of God and we will be there forever.
 - b. We all fail in life but we shall not be completely cast down for the lord is the one who sustains us with his hand.
 - c. The hand of God holds us forever and he never loses his grip and we never fall out of his hand.
 - iv. Reversionistic **2Tim 2:12-13**
 - a. Even in reversionism and renouncing of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he has not lost his salvation nor his Eternal Life status.
 - v. Family **John 1:12, Gal 3:26**
 - a. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone we are BORN again into the Royal Family of God and there is nothing we can do about it and nothing the family can do about it.
 - b. We are born into the family of God and there is no way to become unborn and reverse it.
 - vi. Inheritance **1Pet 1:4-5**
 - a. This includes our Eternal Security.
 - vii. Essence of God **2Pet 3:9, Jude 24**
 - a. Omnipotence of God is able to keep us secure throughout all eternity.

- b. This emphasizes the Sovereignty of God and obviously if he wants all to believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ then those who do he will not for any reason lose any of them.
 - viii. Body **1Cor 12:21 comp Col 1:18**
 - a. We are members of a body with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as head and we are the members and differentiation of the members is based on the concept of spiritual gifts.
 - b. The point is that the Head, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ cannot say to any member of the body, no matter how insignificant, "I don't Need You".
 - ix. Royal Family of God **2Cor 1:22, Eph 1:13, 4:30**
 - a. The Sealing of God the Holy Spirit guarantees our Eternal Security.
 - x. Greek Grammatical Perfect Tense **Eph 2:8-9**
- C. Teaching of Bible Doctrine and the Analogy to the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception: **Matt 13:24, 1Tim 1:18, 6:20, 2Tim 1:14**
 - 1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in teaching to the disciples was making a deposit of doctrine.
 - 2. Paul in the training of other Pastor Teachers was the teacher and Timothy was the student and Paul deposited doctrine with his students here Timothy.
 - 3. When this teaching enters into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is a deposit in Phase II to the Royal Family of God as Bible Doctrine enters the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - 4. Guarding the deposit includes the continued function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and perpetuation of Status Quo Super Grace and avoidance of reversionism and influence of evil.
 - 5. Every believer has his own right Pastor Teacher no better or worse than any other who can communicate Bible Doctrine to you and as it is communicated it is deposited and you guard it by perpetuating the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- D. Training of Pastor Teachers **2Tim 2:1-2**
 - 1. This is recognition of and preparation for use of the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and both are related to the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception under the strict discipline of the local church.
- E. Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) during any adversity **1Pet 4:19**
 - 1. There are 2 kinds of suffering for believers in life after salvation:
 - i. From Divine Discipline based on carnality or reversionism
 - ii. Undeserved Suffering for believers who are under Positive Volition and in Super Grace Status Quo for the purpose of accelerated spiritual growth and divine blessing in the Angelic Conflict.
 - 2. Principles:
 - i. There is no suffering to the believer in eternity **Rev 21:4**
 - ii. The devils world is unfair to the believer
 - iii. While the reversionist are sometimes blessed by the devil as ruler of this world this is a point of disgrace and failure.
 - iv. To be blessed by Satan is to be under maximum influence of evil in the soul.
 - v. This is pseudo maturity and the devil's answer to Status Quo Super Grace.
 - vi. The believers soul is the battleground for the Angelic Conflict.
 - vii. Consequently the more positive the believer is toward Bible Doctrine the more pressure there is from Satan's system.
 - viii. This means that the Super Grace believer sometimes endures maximum pressure from the Cosmic Dynasphere.
 - ix. This requires maximum use of the deposit of Bible Doctrine in the soul of this believer
 - x. The Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) transfers Bible Doctrine from the soul to the adversities of life.

- xi. In maximum use of the Faith Rest Drill ^(4 categories) believers in undeserved suffering according to the Will of God must deposit their souls with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is a faithful creator who has provided Grace from salvation grace to surpassing grace.
- xii. By depositing the soul with the lord in time of maximum suffering and pressure the Super Grace believer glorifies God and manufactures Divine Good.
- xiii. This Divine Good produced under suffering will receive maximum reward in eternity.
- xiv. This is application of Bible Doctrine under pressure, maximum use of the Faith Rest Drill ^(4 categories) which provides blessing in living, dying and forever.
- xv. This is a specific application of the principle of **Ps 55:22** whereby the lord will never allow the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to be disturbed by pressures.

xvi. 1Pet 5:5-7

F. Divine Good

- 1. **1Pet 4:19** production of Divine Good in suffering of the mature believer.

III. The Deposit of Salvation:

- A. The sufferings of Paul in this situation of his incarceration do not hinder dying grace nor the perpetuation of his Super Grace blessings and ultimately his surpassing grace rewards.

B. Doctrine of Suffering:

- 1. General causes for suffering by both believers and unbelievers.
 - i. Loss of Health, wealth, money, property, loved ones or anything that you value.
 - ii. From other people, gossip, ostracism, persecution, violence, crime, warfare, ETC., building happiness on people instead of on doctrine, if you build happiness on your children.
 - iii. Privation including, hunger, thirst, cold, heat, storms, earthquakes, natural disasters, accidents in any variety.
 - iv. Administration of Law applying 99% to criminals including being apprehended as a criminal tried under law and administration of punishment for the crime.
 - v. Social in loneliness, boredom, neglect, ostracism, disapproval, being on welfare.
 - vi. Mental from all Mental Attitude Sins of all kinds, neurosis or psychosis, worry, anxiety and fear, guilt, etc.
 - vii. Rejection of Authority in Love (Right Man / Right Woman), divorce, in childhood, and being fired or dishonorably discharged from the military, loss of citizenship, excommunication, Cut in athletics, expelled from school.
 - a. People generally have no difficulty with authority as long as it goes along with their preconceived ideas and when it does not they feel free to reject that authority.
 - b. This is totally Wrong and out of line.
 - c. When you are under authority the authority Makes All the Policy Decisions and whether they are good or bad you being under authority simply GO ALONG with it.
 - d. This is why some people are not prepared for life as they cannot handle authority whose policy does not match their ideas.
 - viii. Reversionism resulting in reaping what you sow, Divine Discipline in 3 categories.
- 2. Basic Categories of Suffering:
 - i. Time for 2 categories of Human beings, **John 3:36**, Believers and Rejectors of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, unbelievers.
 - a. Unbelievers suffer by the 8 principles above plus rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - i) Rejectors this is the unbeliever suffering in time because of rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment and for reversionism and rejection of other facets of Self Induced Misery

- b. Believers suffer under 20 systems (See #4)
 - i) 1-10 deal with Divine Discipline
 - ii) 11-20 deal with suffering for blessing
 - ii. Eternity
 - a. The unbeliever only will suffer for all eternity in the Lake of Fire **Rev 20-12-15:**
 - b. There is no suffering or regrets for the believer in eternity **Rev 21:4** but there will be vast differences between believers
- 3. Premise for christian suffering:
 - i. All christian suffering is designed for blessing **1Pet 1:7-8, 4;14**
 - ii. The exception is Divine Discipline **Heb 12;6**, for Carnality or Reversionism with Evil
 - a. Sin and Evil are not the same thing and Sin is what you do motivated by or tempted by the Old Sin Nature and Evil is what you THINK.
 - b. The Super Grace believer can be carnal but NOT reversionistic.**
 - c. All intensive suffering is connected with reversionism.
 - d. Most reversionists are also carnal they get a double saturation of discipline.
 - iii. The exception is removed **1Cor 11:31** for carnality with rebound and for reversionism through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. Cursing is therefore turned to blessing Rom 8:28
- 4. Categories of christian suffering:
 - i. Disciplinary deserved suffering
 - a. This suffering is broken down in to 2 categories:
 - i) Sin
 - ii) Evil
 - iii) Occasionally they combine
 - b. **Heb 12:6** the only way God can express love to the carnal or reversionistic believers
 - i) Carnality **Ps 38** Written by David after Bathsheba
 - a) Suffering here varies in intensity based on the carnality you are involved in.
 - b) Carnality can QUICKLY and RAPIDLY be recovered from with the rebound procedure.
 - c) Rapid Carnal recovery is possible in the use of the Rebound Procedure **1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:28-31**, etc.
 - d) He was a Super Grace believer and STAYED in Super Grace and took a great deal of Divine Discipline
 - e) What he did with Bathsheba and Uriah was carnality not reversionism.
 - f) He suffered some 15 years of Divine Discipline but never entered into reversionism and this was cursing turned into blessing.
 - g) **Ps 38** is how David got out of this carnality by his rebounding.
 - h) This was Divine Discipline for a Super Grace believer for his CARNALITY.
 - i) This Divine Discipline is varied depending on the character of the sin and how many sins you have piled on other sins.
 - ii) Reversionism or Evil Ecclesiastes and Song of Solomon
 - a) Evil being a form of reversionism
 - b) Written by Solomon who started in Super Grace Status Quo but wound up in reversionism.

- c) This was a different category of Divine Discipline and recovery is much more difficult requiring consistent daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and consistent rebound function for maybe 2-3 YEARS.
- d) Reversion recovery requires both the consistent use of rebound and Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- e) Divine Discipline for reversionism occurs in 3 categories of warning, intensive, and dying Divine Discipline based on how long you remain in reversionism and whether you enter recovery or NOT.
- iii) These were written by believers under GREAT Divine Discipline.
- iv) When David rebounded his carnality his suffering continued for a while but was then designed for his blessing.
- v) When you rebound carnality 3 things can occur with regard to your Divine Discipline:
 - a) You reenter the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and restored fellowship with God
 - (i) It also means if we judge self we should not be judged.
 - b) The suffering or Divine Discipline could be canceled.
 - c) The suffering or Divine Discipline can continue but reduced in intensity
 - d) The suffering or Divine Discipline can continue as it began
 - e) In the case of Divine Discipline continuing it is now for the blessing of the believer.
- vi) When you suffer Divine Discipline for reversionism you are under a system of 3 categories of Divine Discipline:
 - a) Warning Divine Discipline where Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ stands at the door and Knocks.
 - b) Intense Divine Discipline
 - c) Dying Divine Discipline is for the reversionist who does not respond and does not recover.
 - d) These periods can be protracted situations of Divine Discipline and the whole book of Ecclesiastes and Song of Solomon are protracted Divine Discipline of the believer in reversionism.
- vii) Hymeneas in 1st & 2nd Timothy was a reversionist and was turned over to Satan for Divine Discipline and 2 years later he was still dying the Sin Unto Death and after 2 years of this he did not even consider entering recovery.
- viii) The incestuous believer in 1st & 2nd Cor could not rebound and recover from his reversionism fast enough and was moving toward Super Grace and Paul had to tell the Corinthians to allow him to come back to church.
- c. By association or peripheral Suffering: **1Cor 12:26, Rom 14:7, 1Sam 21**
 - i) This is your being associated with a reversionistic or carnal believer and suffering as a result of it.
 - ii) This is great one for married couples who make a WRONG Marriage
 - a) The wife in reversionism, The husband in carnality

- (i) He suffers in association with her and She suffers in association with him
 - b) The wife in reversionism, the husband is a Super Grace believer consistent in his bible study
 - (i) He suffers because of her.
 - c) One can be carnal or reversionistic, both have to be carnal or reversionistic or any combination thereof.
 - d) If you are in fellowship and moving toward Super Grace and your spouse is in reversionism or carnal you suffer undeserved suffering by association.
 - e) If you are out of fellowship and your spouse is also carnal or reversionistic you suffer discipline by association and so does she.
 - f) When you make wrong decisions in personal relationships you will suffer from association with people who are under some form of Divine Discipline and you will suffer direct Divine Discipline or cursing for blessing.
 - g) When in the relationship are both out of fellowship or in carnality or reversionism they INTENSIFY their suffering.
 - h) Marriage can be a lifetime of intense suffering if you make a mistake.
 - i) When in doubt HOLD OFF in marriage.
 - j) This applies to all close relationships whether personal or business even military etc.
- d. Suffering caused by having wrong priorities or How you get into reversionism **Eccl and SS**
 - i) Doctrine must be first and it is the ONLY tangible priority at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii) Even Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is not a tangible major priority at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God because you have to KNOW Christ to love him and that does not occur until Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii) As you take in Bible Doctrine then other intangible aspects of the life and Spiritual Life become real, what is not seen becomes seen, through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv) If your First Priority is Bible Doctrine then you will eliminate and avoid a great deal of suffering in life.
 - v) Life can become very simple and at the same time wonderful if your priorities are lined up with Doctrine first.
 - vi) Anything you put ahead of Bible Doctrine as a wrong priority is going to be a source of suffering as a disciplinary suffering.
- e. Guilt Complex:
 - i) This is unnecessary compounded suffering brought on to self by reaction to your own failures and there are now excuses for it. **1Tim 1:5-6, 19-20, 3:9:4:1-2, Tit 1:15**
 - ii) This is a Mental Attitude Sins COMPLEX because guilt includes:
 - a) Worry
 - b) Fear
 - c) False Priorities
 - d) Failure to orient to Grace
 - iii) This can only be avoided by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and guilt is often

associated and a sign of with reversionism and rejection of Bible Doctrine.

- a) In reversionism you do not rebound and never leave Status Quo carnality and reversionists in stages 4-8 are constantly carnal and one of the compounding factors is to hold onto a guilt complex.
- b) One of the things which makes the suffering worse is trying to make it all up to God or trying to get rid of the guilt by confessing to a group of people.
- c) This in itself is a vicious compounding of suffering and entrance into and result of reversionism.
- d) Everyone who hears someone confessing personal sins also get into suffering by association because they get out of fellowship just by listening to you confessing your sins.
- iv) The greatest insult for the believer is to call him a Guilty believer and to think you are stupid enough, ignorant enough, disoriented enough to think you should feel guilty about anything you have ever done wrong.
 - a) This is the Modus Operandi of the bleeding heart liberal.
- f. National Discipline **Lev 26, Is 33, 59, Hosea, Jeremiah.**
 - i) This is part of the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline for a nation.
- g. Rejection of the principle of Right Man / Right Woman **EZ 16, 23, Jer 12:7, 15:7-12, 17-18**
 - i) There is with this carnality and reversionism as well and this ADDS to the suffering for this rejection.
 - ii) This can continue for the rest of life when a person marries the wrong person.
 - iii) This is where you get into Jail for life or the Castle of blessing for life based on your decision at the point of marriage.
 - iv) Both believers and unbelievers can make this decision and have suffering for their whole life based on 1 single decision
 - v) **If you are single you should consider holding off in marriage for it is much better to be free and single and have OCCASIONAL MISERY than to be married and have PERPETUAL MISERY.**
 - vi) It can be suffering for blessing or cursing based on your own individual Status Quo in the Plan of God.
 - vii) So you failed miserably and blew the whole concept of Right Man / Right Woman so what are you to do now?
 - viii) You have a choice for the rest of your life to suffer for blessing or cursing depending as always on your attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 - ix) There are ways to have blessing with your mistake but it is inevitable you will always have suffering for making the wrong choice.
- h. Failure to isolate sin – Chain sinning **Heb 12:15**
- i. Temporary Loss of grace norms getting into legalism innocently or knowingly, **Jer 2:24-25**
 - i) This is not a reversionist but one who gets **trapped in some form of legalism** and does not understand why he is suffering.
 - ii) No one can be involved with legalism without there being suffering in their life.
 - iii) Legalism is a producer of suffering and can only have suffering.

- iv) To the extent you allow legalism into your life to that extent you will suffer and legalism is like a cancer which spreads and spreads throughout your life.
- v) A generation or so ago when a person was saved they were told they could no longer:
 - a) Drink Alcohol
 - b) Smoke
 - c) Go to movies
 - d) Play Cards
 - e) Dance
- vi) The person who did all of these was by this effectively a 2nd class christian.
- vii) If the person BUYS these things it places him deep in legalism.
- viii) If you give up things being told to do so you get incredible suffering just from the legalism and its Divine Discipline.
- ix) Legalists are always unhappy and often that is why they go to church because of their legalism and unhappiness and hope going to church will make them happy.
- x) Pride often goes with legalism and with pride goes its counterpart and NO ONE can ever have any arrogance without total misery in their life.
- j. Historic Disaster War, Revolution, depression, etc
 - i) When this is combined with Reversionism you will get additional intensive suffering from disaster etc.
 - ii) When it is combined with carnality there is some suffering which is mitigated by rebound as usual.
 - iii) When it finds the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace there is NO suffering.
- k. Reversionism **Ps 77**
 - i) Reversionist suffer from all 10 of these and have additional suffering in Warning and Intensive Divine Discipline to warn them that they are in reversionism and should make a correction because it is going to get worse.
 - ii) Then in dying Divine Discipline there is a 3rd warning just before taking you out of this life.

Lesson #15 Series # 469 2Tim 1:12

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. Brian M Facker, 1st Lt, USArmy, Battery A, 1st Batallion, 92nd Field Artillery, Vietnam, 31, Mar 1971.
- II. Doctrine of Suffering Continued:
 - A. Christian Suffering:
 - 1. Undeserved Suffering for Blessing:
 - i. This can occur in situations of War, Revolution, Historical Disaster, Depression, or even normal living, etc.
 - ii. To glorify God in the Angelic Conflict; **Job, Luke 15:20-21, 1Pet 1:12, 3:17**
 - a. This was Lazarus in **Luke 15** who was miserable with all sorts of physical ailments and then died.
 - b. When you get close to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace you will have suffering to test your application of Bible Doctrine to see if you are ready to apply the doctrine you have in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iii. To learn self discipline and Obedience to authority: **Heb 5:8, Phil 2:8, 1Tim 2:1-7**

- a. This is very hard to learn especially if you think you are smarter than others especially one over you in authority.
- b. You may go from wanting to punch them in the nose to violating the principles under which you are supposed to be functioning under their authority.
- c. This is LACK of self discipline and some people NEVER grow up without self discipline.
- d. You never will be a good lover unless you have self discipline.
- e. We will eventually at some time be under the authority of someone who we think is dumb or stupid and whose policy we think is ludicrous and would laugh at if we were not supposed to function under it.
- f. It is NOT god's will for you to break out of this.
- g. Freedom gives us the RIGHT to choose to go into military service or take a job or join a team or enter a school and we submit to authority but to do so we MUST have flexibility.
 - i) Without flexibility you are most assuredly a fat headed arrogant jackass as pride most often assumes you are smarter and better and your policies are wiser and that you are greater than the authority over you.
- h. The flexibility we MUST have will allow us to develop self discipline under this authority which will lead to developing capacity for every aspect of life.
- i. Everyone MUST have self discipline and it can be acquired in many areas including:
 - i) Bible Class
 - ii) School
 - iii) Military Service
 - iv) The HOME with parents who have a brain
 - v) Athletics
 - vi) Marriage of the wrong husband
- j. No one has a right to be a leader until he has been under something which involves authority which is unfair and monstrous and has the flexibility to say YES SIR, NO SIR and stay under that authority.
 - i) Under this authority YOU MUST LEARN flexibility and develop capacity for life in order to be qualified for leadership.
 - ii) IF you don't stay under authority which is unfair and learn self discipline you will abuse authority when you have it.
 - iii) No one can be a great leader without this.
- k. We must never go around authority ever for any reason and this is why the strongest punishment for violations of authority is given by CRIMINAL organizations.
 - i) All Criminals reject authority as a basic characteristic so if you have a criminal organization and you have someone who violates the authority you simply KILL HIM.
 - ii) Capital punishment is the only solution for criminal organizations because the criminal mind is NOT SUBJECT TO DISCIPLINE.
 - iii) Criminals do not have a clear concept of discipline and the one in charge with the authority can only make his will felt by one of 2 systems, severe physical beatings or executions.
- l. Every organization in the world must have discipline and when we are too stupid to recognize it and then buck the authority all of our life.
- m. WE can learn easy way or hard way with minimal or excessive suffering.

- n. The easiest way to learn self discipline is to engage in a vigorous system of exercise which HURTS and just keep on doing it even when you don't feel like doing it.
 - o. Many have a problem with authority because of arrogance in the soul.
 - p. Many think they are smarter than everyone else or really are and therefore have a problem with authority which is not as smart as they are.
 - i) This makes it difficult to knuckle under to others being smarter than they are and having a policy better than theirs.
 - q. All rejection of authority has some ARROGANCE in it and this is a sin so there is Divine Discipline for that and rejection of authority adds to that suffering.
 - r. Very few people are smart enough to identify authority and respect it and are flexible enough in humility no matter how poor the policy is to live with it and under it and still do the best possible job no matter what.
 - s. In order to do this you must be flexible, have a sense of humor and have capacity for life which very few people really have enough of.
 - i) When you reject authority and buck the tiger so to speak you don't have enough capacity for life and have a GREAT impression of Self and a very poor impression of the one in authority.
 - t. You may be VERY Smart but sometimes it hurts to be too smart and often you can be too smart for your own good because when you take your smarts and say to yourself that you know more than the one in authority, can do more than they can and he is a dummy and therefore you will not obey him or go around him or not follow the policy of the job and this is REAL TROUBLE.
 - u. A lot of people when they reject authority try to straighten out everyone they are around and this is total ARROGANCE.
 - v. These are people who tell the boss off or fool the police officer or do some other clever thing to get around authority and this will hurt them all of their life.
 - w. These people MAKE their own misery and most suffering for believers IS NOT FOR THEIR BLESSING.
- iv. Suffering to demonstrate the sufficiency of Grace: **2Cor 12:1-10**
 - a. Some would never know you were under GRACE if God did not provide suffering for you and when it was gone you would then realize you were GRACED OUT of the suffering.
 - v. Suffering to eliminate the occupational hazard of Pride and Arrogance and relate it to the sufficiency of GRACE. **2Cor 11:24-33, 12:1-10**
 - a. You cannot become arrogant without suffering horribly and usually this suffering is blind suffering from blind arrogance since most people won't face up to the fact that they are Arrogant.
 - b. The purpose of the suffering is to eliminate the Arrogance and therefore is suffering for blessing.
 - c. Arrogance is an occupational hazard for the Human Race and it must be related to the sufficiency of Grace
 - vi. **Suffering to develop enough faith to function in the Faith Rest Drill** (4 categories)
1Pet 1:7-8
 - a. You cannot develop in any field at some point without pressure.
 - b. This is easily seen in exercise where you increase constantly the resistance, repetitions, or distances you must accomplish.
 - c. No leader ever develops without pressure as seen with Patton, MacArthur, Lee (who was considered GREATER after Gettysburg than before; and after the war than before and during the war having demonstrated leadership characteristics which were phenomenal).

- d. The pressure on Lee and the whole South was the vicious evil of the “reconstruction” which was placed on them by the Yankees who became soft in the north while the south became tough because of it.
 - e. Out of this emerged a wonderful person from the south and the greatest soldiers came out of the south after the war between the states and the greatest men were southern gentlemen who learned under PRESSURE.
 - f. Suffering and pressure is inevitable and not only does it eliminate the occupational hazard of Arrogance but it relates to the sufficiency of grace and is the means by which faith is developed by which the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) can operate.
 - g. The trigger mechanism by which you apply Bible Doctrine to your life experience from your soul is FAITH REST and it must be developed and strong
 - h. In addition there is suffering by the Pastor Teacher watching believers in the congregation try to take NOTES.....
 - vii. Suffering to accelerate the construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. **James 1:1-6**
 - a. You must have and be able to meet and go through the pressures of life and on you way to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace you WILL have pressures and it will be undeserved and YOU MUST MEET THESE PRESSURES WITH Bible Doctrine and overcome them.
 - b. **When you get close to Super Grace there will be a great deal of testing and there is a big pressure area in your life JUST prior to entering Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace where the doctrine you have learned will be tested in a shakedown effort just before entering Super Grace.**
 - c. **No one ever gets to Super Grace without some REAL GOOD testing.**
 - d. This prepares the believer for the Standard Operating Procedure of the Super Grace life.
 - viii. Suffering as a means of witnessing for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **2Cor 3+4**
 - a. You witness to people about the lord and they don’t respond but you get into some intensive suffering situation and carry yourself well through it and they are now impressed and see something in your life different and this is occasionally the means of evangelizing someone.
 - ix. Suffering to help others who are suffering or about to is very specialized: **2Cor 1:3-5**
 - a. Sometimes you suffer something special ahead of someone else in order to be able to help that other weaker believer when they go through the same thing.
 - b. This often can occur with loss of a loved one when a new believer also has it occur in their life and you can support them because you have been through the same thing.
 - c. God at times uses strong believers to encourage and bring along weaker believers, suffering to help others who suffer.
 - x. Suffering to learn the value of Bible Doctrine: **Ps 119:67-68, 71**
 - a. This is the truly stupid person who won’t come to Bible Doctrine until he hurts so bad and nothing else has worked so he tries Bible Doctrine.
 - xi. Suffering for the advance and impact of Bible Doctrine: **2Tim 1:12-14**
- B. Concept of Family Suffering:
- 1. The basic principle of family suffering **Ex 20:4-6, Deut 5:8-10**
 - 2. There is a 4 generation curse which is specifically enumerated in **Ex 34:3-7, Num 14:8**
 - i. This is where a curse for a generation goes down to the next and next and next for cursing of 4 generations.
 - ii. This results in unexplainable suffering for those in the later generations.

3. The mechanics of this curse **Prov 30:11-17**
 - i. Family suffering combines suffering by association with other factors
4. There a law of culpability in this curse **Deut 24;16**
 - i. You are not ever included in the next generation cursing unless you are culpable under the same principle which requires cursing.
5. The problem of children:
 - i. Fairness toward children **Deut 21:15-17**
 - a. If you are strong in discipline and always fair and compassionate.
 - b. You can be firm but NOT bitter toward children but must be compassionate.
 - c. One who is compassionate and love his children will spank them on their gluteus maximus.
 - d. If you are bitter toward your children for something they have done and have hardness of soul you will slap them.
 - e. These are parents who are OUT OF LINE and the face was never designed for parental discipline toward children.
 - f. This often comes from the child doing something which instantly raises your anger and there is no compassion toward the child for this violation.
 - g. YOU NEVER SHOW COMPASSION but you must be fair toward your children and this requires an inner compassion and an overt fairness toward them.
 - h. You cannot be bitter and discipline them properly.
 - i. If you are bitter this is one type of suffering and if you are unfair in your discipline this is another type of suffering both of the soul and whatever physical infliction is involved in the discipline.
 - j. This is where parents get out of line being stupid enough to think they should slap their children.
 - ii. Maximum discipline of Death for children, teenagers, who do not respond to bonifide discipline in the home.
 - a. When this fails, and it can, the bible says that when these children as teenagers are out of line constantly they should be executed. **Deut 21:18-22**
 - b. This is one reason Israel never had a crime problem in the ancient world.
 - c. If the parents could not handle an incorrigible child who became a teenager and rejected the authority of the parents who could not control them then that teenager was taken out of the city gates and stoned to death.
 - d. Crime in this way was prevented.
6. Doctrine breaks the 4 generation family curse: **Ps 100:5, Deut 7:9, 6:6-13, 11:18-21 combined in that order.**
 - i. The only solution to the 4 generation curse aside from avoiding culpability is through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. This demonstrates that when a child responds to Bible Doctrine it will break the 4 generation curse.
7. Children's gimmick **Jer 31:15, Num 14:31**
 - i. This was the excuse of the Exodus Generation NOT wanting to go into the land to confront the Giants because the Children might get hurt.
 - ii. Here the parents suffer because of using their children as an excuse to NOT attend bible class or some other thing.
 - iii. This excuse changes character as the children grow older and become more and more incorrigible so that finally the parent cannot go to bible study because they have to go to court and bail out the child, ETC.
 - iv. Using children as an excuse to not do something commanded in the word of God you will produce suffering in your life.

- v. It becomes very obvious that the potential for suffering dramatically increases as you bring children into the home.
8. Triumph of children with Bible Doctrine: **Lam 3;21-31, Ps 119**
- i. It is possible that every category of suffering can be eliminated by children moving to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as adults.
- C. Concept of Economic Suffering:
1. When there is freedom in the economy and runs its normal course of supply and demand you WILL have periodic depressions.
 - i. This is not the case in the United States of America where the government is always playing God with the economy.
 2. **The Laws of Divine Establishment say that God uses depression to eliminate the UNFIT people in a nation.**
 - i. **A nation is weakened by NOT destroying its unfit from time to time.**
 - ii. **A nation is weakened if certain national disasters do not come along and eliminate the weak in the nation.**
 - iii. **These are people who have no desire to work no skills to work with and no quality in the work they do among other factors.**
 - iv. **Economic depression eliminates these riff raff people who are cancers while interference brings on revolution which destroys the good people in the nation.**
 - v. **This has nothing to do with race but with a LAW that if you do not have a periodic economic depression then the nation will become so weak it will destroy itself and this is our Status Quo today.**
 - vi. **This is what Welfare functions have done and there are certain people who should die and who should not live having no concept of freedom.**
 - vii. **These people would not scrub floors for 5cents per hour and when you get too many of these people you destroy the nation ESPECIALLY if they are VOTING.**
 - viii. **One way or another you suffer under this principle.**
 - ix. **When the government interferes in this situation as they have constantly done in the Unites States of America you prolong whatever depression is to occur but you also bring on destruction of the nation by revolution which wipes out the good people.**
 - x. **The fact is that IF the government POSTPONES DEPRESSION long enough inevitably you will have a revolution which is done by destroying freedom.**
 3. Inflation is a part of the 4th cycle of Divine Discipline **Lev 26:26** and it precedes depression.
 - i. Depression is a healthy sign in a nation while revolution is always unhealthy.
 - ii. By the government and “federal reserve” messing around with interest rates we have postponed for MANY decades a depression and thereby set ourselves up for a REVOLUTION.
 - iii. Depression eliminates certain categories of people in a nation which are destructive in the nation and this is a divine elimination.
 - iv. We don’t eliminate them God does it through the function of this economic law.
 - v. If, however, you do not have a depression and build these people up more and more eventually they will have a revolution and destroy the establishment principles.
 - vi. The choice in a nation is to either let God eliminate the unfit periodically or let the unfit eliminate you with revolution.
 4. Since depression should be a periodic thing says the bible the importance of solvency is elucidated in **Gen 41**
 - i. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will not get himself into a situation where he is insolvent.
 - a. This can be done in many different ways.

- b. This is the story of Joseph and how he protected the Egyptian empire from destruction by making them solvent.
- 5. Depression also strengthens spiritually acting as a test for the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) **Gen 12;10 (failure), 1Pet 1:7-8 (Victory)**
- 6. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the answer to depression rather than money in the pocket. **2Chron 20:9**
 - i. With Bible Doctrine you can do something
- 7. Divine Viewpoint is needed to survive economic depression and disaster **Ps 33:17-20**
- 8. Depression is a part of Divine Discipline for the nation and individual reversionist under the influence of evil **Ps 105;16, Jer 11:22**
 - i. A good depression always changes the attitude of the working man who in periods of great prosperity gets very sloppy about their work and job and it takes a good depression to get them sharp again.
 - ii. Depression also kills off a lot of useless weak people who otherwise act as a cancer to the nation and the depression is the enema of the people in the nation and cleans off those who should be destroyed and if they are not they will multiply like rabbits and shortly thereafter foment a revolution.
 - iii. Because the French government postponed the Depression which should have occurred because of Louis XIV for 100 years they had the French revolution.
 - iv. Many of the rabble who were involved in the revolution would have died off but instead they were kept alive by the government to breed and these were the rabble of the revolution who destroyed many wonderful people and almost destroyed France except for the intervention of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in History through the use of Napoleon Bonaparte.
- 9. False teaching in time of depression intensifies that depression **Jer 14:13-16+18**
- 10. God protects the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in depression **Job 5:20, Rom 8:35**
 - i. More than protection from God the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is BLESSED by God in depression and depression does not hinder divine blessing of the Super Grace believer.
- 11. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the solution to depression consequently advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the true basis for restoring the economy **Is 37:30-31.**

Lesson #16 Series # 469 2Tim 1:12

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. Clarence E Sasser, Spc 5, USArmy Headquarters Co, 3rd Battalion, 60th Infantry 9th Infantry Division, From Shenango TX, 10 Jan 1968 Vietnam.
 - B. Mark Shannon WWII Friend of the Col, at Guadalcanal.
 - C. William W. Say, Sgt. USArmy, 62nd Transportation Co. 7th Transportation Battalion, 48th Transportation Group, From Alabama, 25 Aug 1968, Vietnam.
- II. Doctrine of Suffering Continued:
 - A. Review the past 2 lessons on suffering
 - B. David as king was a Super Grace believer and in the last part of his life he was and remained in Super Grace.
 - 1. David was not perfect and HE HAD HIS MOMENTS OF REVERSIONISM WHICH HAVE BEEN PREVIOUSLY STUDIED.
 - 2. David was in Super Grace at this time but in regard to his activities with Bathsheba he was CARNAL in Super Grace but NOT reversionistic.
 - C. There are 2 concepts of the Christian Way of Life one is absolute one is relative.
 - 1. One is that you are either Spiritual or Carnal and these are mutually exclusive
 - 2. The other has to do with progression or retrogression in the Spiritual Life.
 - i. You start as a new infant believer and learn Bible Doctrine consistently and eventually you will become mature.

- ii. OR you start as a new infant maybe even advancing and maybe even to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but they you reject Bible Doctrine and enter a retrogressive pattern entering the 8 stages of reversionism.
 - 3. You can be carnal or spiritual as an infant, a growing adolescent believer or even as a mature believer.
 - 4. You can enter reversionism as an infant, a growing adolescent believer or even as a mature believer.
 - 5. Rebound takes care of carnality instantly.
 - 6. Consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception with consistent rebound is required over a prolonged time for recovery from reversionism.
- D. God can only demonstrate his love to believers through suffering in time: 1Pet 4:14+16**
- 1. The only time a believer will suffer is in time Rev 21:4 and there is no suffering in eternity for the believer, and we must remember that whatever suffering comes to us by way of Divine Discipline or blessing will only occur in time.
 - i. There is no suffering for the believer in eternity.
 - ii. Therefore in the short period of your life as a believer God must bring in the principles of suffering for both Divine Discipline and blessing and concentrate them in your short lifetime.
 - 2. There is no suffering too great for the GRACE Plan of God which can meet any suffering or exigency too great for the Plan of God.
 - 3. Divine power and provision for suffering is greater than any pressure of life.
 - 4. Super Grace is the Status Quo in which to experience this principle and you are fully prepared for suffering in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and NOT at all prepared prior to that.
 - 5. The Super Grace believer is qualified through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to weather any storm in life.
- E. The Unique Suffering of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross Is 53:11-12**
- 1. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace at a very early age all the suffering which he had was suffering for blessing.
 - i. He was perfect born minus the Old Sin Nature and had no imputation of Adam's Original Sin and lived a life without personal sin, Doctrine of Impeccability.
 - ii. He was Impeccable and reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace after age 12 at some point.
 - iii. The intensification of suffering is what any believer in Super Grace can go through with some exceptions due to the Angelic Conflict.
 - 2. When he reached the cross his sufferings were totally and absolutely unique.
 - i. We can so some small degree appreciate them but there is no application for us in any way.

Is 53:11-12

v11: From the extreme sorrow of his soul or essence, He, God the Father, shall see Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ bearing our sin, and be propitiated or satisfied; by knowledge of or faith in Him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, my righteous servant the one without sin, shall the many be justified; for he and he only will carry or bear the load of their punishment for sin.

v12: Therefore in conclusion, I, God the Father, will distribute or apportion to Him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the gains, spoils or plunder of the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict (Eph 4:8-12) because of the many Believers of the Royal Family of God. And Then He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, shall re-distribute or divide the spoil or plunder of victory of resurrection, ascension and session, to the great or mighty ones the Super Grace Believers who execute the Spiritual Life of the Royal Family of God, because he has poured out his soul unto Physical Death, prior to this physical death he was identified with the Levitical offerings for Sin or rebellion, (Spiritual Death) because he himself, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ lifted and carried the sin of the many believers and unbelievers and concerning the offerings for sin the whole thing was caused to fall upon him.

- ii. Ps 22 recorded his screams in v1-6
- iii. v12 has a distribution of spoils after victory in battle and out of the unique suffering of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ comes victory in the Angelic Conflict.

- iv. Therefore unique suffering turns into our blessings.
- v. He suffered at an intensity which we cannot even understand and it is impossible for anyone else to have this suffering.
- vi. Every blessing we will ever have in time or eternity comes out of this suffering of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- vii. Eph 4:8-12 describes the spoils of the victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Angelic Conflict.
- viii. There is then a distribution of plunder and spoils **Matt 27:52-53** for the Old Testament Scripture Saints to Israel and all Old Testament Scripture believers.
- ix. The distribution of spoils to the Church Age believer in the Royal Family of God who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or beyond, are incredible
- x. God the Father distributes the spoils of victory to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at his right hand and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ distributes these to the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in the Church Age.
- xi. All this occurs because of the incomprehensible suffering of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all our sins.
- xii. These spoils and plunder include all Super Grace blessings including dying grace and surpassing grace in eternity.
- xiii. The secret to the distribution of the plunder to believers in the Church Age was the last thing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ uttered in his last breath on the cross in one sentence which is the heritage of Bible Doctrine passed on to every generation, so that in dying on the cross he passed on to us a phenomenal spiritual heritage.
- xiv. In dying physically he did not suffer at all for once he said “Finished” salvation was completed and there was no more unique suffering with salvation potential accomplished totally and from that point on it was Dying Grace for him.
- xv. Each of the gospel writers developed a different aspect of the death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross:
 - a. **Matt 27:50** emphasizes the sound being loud when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ uttered this last sentence and could be heard all over Golgotha.
 - b. **Mark 15:37** emphasizes the fact of his perfect breath control in his last sentence indicating total lack of pain in dying grace.
 - i) When a person is in pain they do not control their breath and will gasp or groan when under pain.
 - ii) He had accomplished the most unique maximum suffering in Human History which we can not really understand but appreciate from the perspective of provision of salvation potential for us.
 - c. **Luke 23:46** emphasizes the Content of his last sentence where he said, “Father into your hands I deposit My spirit”
 - i) This does not give you the whole statement but just a hint of what was actually said
 - d. The whole message is found in **Ps 31:5** which Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was quoting at this time which says, “Into your hand I deposit my spirit, for you have delivered me oh Jehovah God of Doctrine”.
 - e. Deliverance and Doctrine are the 2 important words and they are the whole story of our heritage and the source of receiving our share of the spoils and plunder of the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
- xvi. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was identified with offerings for sin with emphasis that in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross he suffered in an unusual unique way.

- a. There is no way we can ever understand what it meant for the lord to suffer as he did in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
- b. The only thing which will come close to this suffering is the unbeliever in the Lake of Fire and even that is not as intense despite lasting for all eternity.

Lesson #17 Series # 469 2Tim 1:12

- I. A clear statement was made in the introduction here which is pertinent to many believers and should be passed on.
 - A. The problem was the T&P was getting inundated with complaints about other Pastor Teachers in other areas who were disallowing their people to listen to tapes (It is more than this) and the Col was here straightening this out.
 - B. You can reach Super Grace Status Quo easily on tapes without ever going into a local church anywhere PROVIDED YOU STAY WITH 1 PERSON AS Pastor Teacher.**
 - C. No more pastors conferences in Berachah Church all the Pastor Teacher must do to be squared away is get 1st and 2nd Timothy studies.
 - D. Any believer can leave a local church and listen to tapes and grow in the Spiritual Life and any person chooses to go to a local church and thinks that Pastor Teacher is his right Pastor Teacher they both have a right to do so.
 1. As long as you don't interfere, attack, offend or try to drag others away from the local church there.
 2. There should never be any interference, criticism, or attempts to destroy the authority of the Pastor Teacher of any given local church.
 3. Whether they are GOOD doctrinal Pastor Teachers or Poor coo koo pastors makes no difference the person who wants to leave should leave quietly and without any criticism or attacking.
 - E. No more recommending Pastor Teachers for other areas of local churches.
 - F. No more listing of churches in other areas of the nation.
- II. V12-18 a Paragraph related to and leading up to Academic and Self discipline whereby believer grow in the Spiritual Life and where life is fulfilled and they become spiritually self sustaining.
 - A. The first deposit in this area is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - B. Paul suffered at the end of his life by being incarcerated by Nero in the mamartime dungeon and ultimately with an unfair trial and unfair treatment and then decapitation.
 1. These sufferings do not impact the Super Grace blessings of Paul in any way.
 - C. Believers must be flexible in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine but also indefatigable.
 - D. There is a contrast in Paul suffering in the dungeon and at the same time great blessing.
 1. You can have in reality great suffering and adversity and at the same time in your soul great happiness
 2. So that suffering and adversity is a circumstance which does not dictate to you your Mental Attitude or any other thing.
 3. With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul your Mental Attitude is not a slave to circumstances.
 4. When you put yourself under the authority of Adverse circumstances in life because of being minus Bible Doctrine your Mental Attitude will be Bad and you will complain and fall apart being bitter, vindictive and implacable being ruled and a slave to these circumstances.
 5. When you have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then your circumstances become YOUR SLAVE.
 6. This occurs in Super Grace Status Quo as it did with Paul.
 7. Just because Paul found himself arrested, incarcerated in a vile dungeon, having a totally unfair biased trial and about to be executed, this did not change his happiness, blessing or any part of this Mental Attitude.

8. Adverse circumstances and pressure do not effect the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the same Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which advances the believer to Super Grace Status Quo also produces blessing in time of suffering and adversities and disasters.
9. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul provides every capacity for life and meets every exigency in life.

E. Principles:

1. Adverse circumstances and pressure DO NOT effect the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
2. The same Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which produces Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace also provides blessing in time of suffering and disaster.
3. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul provides every capacity for life and meets every exigency in life.

F. The super grace believer when he faces disaster or great adversity does not depend on these circumstances to influence his happiness or any part of his Mental Attitude.

1. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is NOT ashamed or upset or depressed or having a bad Mental Attitude in adversity because there is too much Sharing the Happiness of God in his soul to ever be ashamed of his suffering.
 - i. He has too much capacity in his soul for life and love, and is too occupied with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and has too many wonderful memories to let any pressure or suffering be disturbing to him.
2. All of it inevitably is directed toward Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he cannot see any human friends because they are all scattered all over the place but he can see the lord he being in effect always with him right there.
3. The focus is on how wonderful the lord in fact is.
4. Friends of the past who have contributed wonderful memories to the Super Grace believers life cannot be seen and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ cannot be SEEN but he is always with the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who us under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
5. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace LOVES Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because he knows who and what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is from the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
6. The Super Grace believer is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and even though he is in a place of incredible pressure he knows that Christ is always with him and understands his essence.
7. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God you believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in a moment of time and the results go on forever and ever.
 - i. You are saved in the past and as a result you have forever Eternal Life.
8. This is dogmatic reality that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God results in Eternal Security.
9. Although Paul is in prison under pressure and adversity the Romans cannot cut the doctrine and confidence out of his soul and he has it and is using the doctrine and enjoying the circumstances as from the lord.
10. The key here in the end on this verse is Eternal Security and this tells us that ONCE you believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you are saved and always be saved and there is nothing you can do to get out of your salvation.
11. It takes an incredibly arrogant and STUPID person to think that some sin which shocks us personally will shock God and cancel our salvation.
12. People are so stupid to think that they have the ability to cancel the OMNIPOTENCE of God by something which they do...???
13. The omnipotence of God GUARDS your salvation and you cannot lose it and ONCE saved you are always saved.

2Tim 1:12

v12: Because of which cause, Also for this reason of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, I, Paul, am caused to, in adversity being under pressure, suffer these things of my unfair trial, incarceration by Nero in the roman dungeon, and ultimately decapitation execution, Nevertheless, I am not ashamed, upset, disturbed, unhappy in these circumstances of pressure. For, you see, I know intimately in whom I have believed in the past with the result that I have Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God forever, and I have received absolute confidence in the past, from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with the result that I keep on possessing confidence from that doctrine, with regard to Eternal Security that he keeps on being able to guard my deposit of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, against that Day of the Great White Throne Judgment which we will not see.

Lesson #18	Series # 469	2Tim 1:12
-------------------	---------------------	------------------

- I. Deposit Analogies of the Bible: review lesson 14.
 - A. Evangelism: Paul in Acts 17:2-3 was going to the congregation and reasoning with them taking the Old Testament Scripture which they had and he knew and presenting to them from it the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - B. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God & Eternal Security: **2Tim 1:12**,
 1. **Positional Rom 8:38-39**
 2. **Logical Rom 8:32, 5:**
 3. **Anthropomorphism of the Hand of God John 10:28, Ps 27:34 (?37:24)**
 4. **Reversionistic 2Tim 2:12-13**
 5. **Family John 1:12, Gal 3:26**
 6. **Inheritance 1Pet 1:4-5**
 7. **Essence of God 2Pet 3:9, Jude 24**
 8. **Body 1Cor 12:21 comp Col 1:18**
 9. **Royal Family of God 2Cor 1:22, Eph 1:13, 4:30**
 10. **Greek Grammatical Perfect Tense Eph 2:8-9**
 11. People who think that they can do something to cancel the power or plan of God are saturated with Arrogance
 12. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is we receive SALVATION and this is an eternal gift and nothing we can think, do or say will reverse it.
 - C. The function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception: **Matt 13:24, 1Tim 1:18, 6:20, 2Tim 1:14**
 - D. Training of Pastor Teachers **2Tim 2:1-2**
 - E. Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) during any adversity **1Pet 4:19**
 - 1.
 - F. Divine Good **1Pet 4:19**
 - G. There are 2 kinds of suffering for the believer in time:
 1. Deserved For Divine Discipline for reversionism or carnality or both
 2. Undeserved for believers under consistent Positive Volition in Super Grace For Blessing as part of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul part of spiritual growth and blessing.
 3. There is NO Suffering for the believer in eternity **Rev 21:4**
 4. The devil's world is unfair to the believer and even though reversionistic believers are blessed by the devil as ruler of the world this is a point of disgrace and failure.
 - i. Satan has a pseudo Super Grace and is trying to bless reversionistic believers to frustrate the Plan of God of grace for the Angelic Conflict.
 5. To be blessed by the devil is to be under maximum influence of evil in the soul and is pseudo maturity and the devils answer to the Super Grace life.
 6. To the believer his SOUL is the battleground of the Angelic Conflict and there is a battle for every believer's soul.
 7. There is on the one hand Bible Doctrine to pull you in the direction of the Grace Plan of God and on the other hand there is EVIL and reversionism to pull you in the direction of the Cosmic Dynasphere plan of Satan.

8. The Human Viewpoint which is sometimes innocuous but as it progresses and advances becomes a vicious evil is the basis for receiving reward from Satan.
9. The Super Grace believer will therefore have to endure maximum pressure from the Cosmic Dynasphere which requires maximum use of your deposit of Bible Doctrine.
10. The maximum use of Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in phenomenal blessing for that believer.
11. The Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) transfers Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the adversities of life and the believer in Super Grace can ride the crest of the wave of adversity or disaster and never falls victim to it.
12. Maximum use of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) in Undeserved suffering results in some of the most phenomenal blessings in life.
 - i. Great happiness comes out of suffering and adversity but only to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace since he is the only one who has the deposit of Bible Doctrine in his soul.
 - ii. By depositing the soul with the lord in time of maximum pressure and adversity and suffering the believer comes up with maximum Divine Good produced under suffering and it will result in MAXIMUM reward in eternity.
13. We all as believers will be in eternity with a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, sin, and Human Good.
 - i. There will however be a maximum differences in reward and blessing in eternity between believers based on their attitude toward Bible Doctrine in time.

Ps 55:22

v22: Put your anxieties or cares, or Cast what has been given you, doctrine, on Jehovah, and he will sustain or uphold you in the greatest disaster, he will never permit the righteous, believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to fall, or be shaken or destroyed when all else is falling apart.

1Pet 5:5-7

- H. Paul used the deposit systems of the ancient world banking system to portray the blessings which come from Eternal Security.
 1. Once you are saved salvation is not an issue and once saved you are not working for it, trying to prove it and salvation is behind you and therefore you are totally and completely secure.
 2. The deposit of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone takes care of JUDGMENT forever.
 3. Paul is therefore not ashamed in the first deposit he had which was Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 4. Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is the means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is a nonmeritorious system of THINKING.
 5. There is no such thing as blind faith FAITH IS THINKING and the object of faith has all the merit.
 6. Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is the only means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and when this occurs you have made a DEPOSIT and this is an eternal, secure and guaranteed by the very Essence of God which will result in spending eternity with God.
- II. The deposit of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer.
 - A. Timothy will now after his recovery from reversionism be the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which will carry his generation and his generation will have even greater blessing than Paul's had.
 1. Timothy will communicate enough Bible Doctrine in his generation to produce a LARGE nucleus of believers which will bring about the greatest period of Human History.
 - i. This will be the Antoine Caesars.
 - ii. This was a period of history of the roman empire where the spiritual heritage of Bible Doctrine was perpetuated to a peak with a large number of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

- iii. Paul's generation had a few believers in Super Grace
 - iv. Timothy's generation will have many believers in Super Grace
 - v. The generation after Timothy will have far more again than both.
 - vi. The Super Grace believer is one who holds up history in his generation by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 2. Many believer are not familiar with nor aware of the fact that by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace they are making an incredible contribution to the history of their generation.
 - i. It is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who is the SALT of the earth and who carries his generation historically.
 - ii. Great generations historically have always been ones with Super Grace believers providing great influence.
- B. Principle:
- 1. Once you accept Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior you receive 39 irrevocable assets and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit
 - 2. The objective after this is to function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception daily to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace and beyond.
 - 3. You are permitted to live a certain amount of time given by God in terms of one day at a time in which you have time to take in Bible Doctrine today, tomorrow and every day.
 - 4. Once you reach, by means of the support you get from Logistical Grace or Living Grace, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super Grace you then will receive blessing in 5 categories which belong to you and were designed for you in Eternity Past.
 - i. Spiritual Blessings
 - ii. Temporal Blessings
 - iii. Association Blessings
 - iv. Historical Blessings
 - v. Dying Grace Blessings.
 - 5. After our transfer to eternity we will receive blessings and rewards greater than can be explained or expressed in human language.
 - 6. THIS is the Plan of God for the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- C. We are left alive in time after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to be blessed by God.
- 1. The alternative is the neglect or reject Bible Doctrine and receive instead Divine Discipline in many categories and under many conditions.
 - 2. In both cases this is the expression of the Love of God toward the believer.
 - 3. It is the Will of God for you to be blessed and ONLY YOU can change the outcome by rejection of Bible Doctrine.
- D. We must at some point in life become one who can think categorically in the soul.
- 1. The soul has self consciousness and this is where thinking occurs in the Left Lobe of the Soul and the Right Lobe.
 - i. There must be volition activity Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine Negative Volition toward false information.
 - 2. We also have emotion which is the appreciator of the soul.
 - 3. The Right Lobe or Heart in the bible is what is involved in doing thinking.
 - i. As a man thinks in his Right Lobe SO HE IS.
 - 4. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has:
 - i. Frame of Reference
 - a. Where we have usable and applicable information including (hopefully) a mess of Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. Memory Center
 - a. This is where we store information an are able to pull out various information at various times.
 - iii. Vocabulary Storage

- a. We learn words and their meanings in order to communicate and these are REQUIRED for thinking.
- iv. Categorical Storage
 - a. The development of a technical vocabulary leads to the development of categories of information where things are related together.
- v. Norms and standards
 - a. Conscience
- vi. Launch Pad
 - a. Where information is applied to experiences.
- vii. These are connected one to another so that they interact and give us something to apply to life.

E. There must be a categorical outline in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul a pattern of information of a high standard

III. The Grace Provision for learning Bible Doctrine:

- A. This is the way we learn all Bible Doctrine and maintain our Super Grace Status Quo and the basis for all blessings from God.
 - 1. Blessings from Satan are excluded and he does have the power to bless and has a pseudo Super Grace system by which he does bless.
- B. This is everything which God has provided totally apart from our Merit, Ability, and any system of works on our part to assimilate the word of God.
- C. There is first formation and preservation of the canon of scripture:
 - 1. Verbal Plenary Inspiration
 - 2. God's protection in preservation of the canon throughout history so that the meaning of any passage is as perspicuous today as when it was first written.
- D. Divine authorization for the classroom of the local church:
 - 1. It is a class for learning Bible Doctrine and the place of assembly for all believers in a specific geographic location.
 - 2. It is a classroom under very very strict academic discipline.
 - 3. Each person in the classroom to learn Bible Doctrine is royalty and it requires a very strict system of discipline in order to establish and maintain an environment conducive to learning what is taught.
 - 4. All believers are free to make decisions to enter the local church of sit down for personal bible study.
 - 5. This results in you immediately coming under the authority of the Pastor Teacher and his personality or any other factor has no bearing on your conduct or what is being taught.
 - 6. The only issue is that he has the authority to communicate the word of God and we have no interest in his person even as he has no right to intrude on our privacy but ONLY in the content of the message which is what causes spiritual growth.
 - 7. The inspiration or antagonism which develops in contact with the Pastor Teacher has no bearing on the doctrine learned.
 - 8. In order to submit to his authority and learn Bible Doctrine and grow spiritually you must be flexible.
 - 9. From this flexibility comes self discipline and from this develops capacity for life.
 - 10. One of the best things which ever happened to us as a people in the United States of America is from this concept of military induced flexibility and self discipline came the GI Bill after WWII.
 - 11. The men coming out of the service after the war had great capacity for life which was translated into an education they being mature enough to understand what they wanted to do and where they wanted to go and therefore they received education under the GI Bill.
 - 12. This is something which congress has basically destroyed since the 70's and this is wrong since there ought to be something like the GI Bill.
 - 13. NO ONE who knuckles under to the discipline in the military from his own flexibility and develops personal self discipline is ever the same person again and when he comes out of military service with that great self discipline he is now mature enough to know

what he wants to do and where he wants to go in life and that is the best expenditures of money from the government.

14. Since we have so many forms of public education funded by the government all which should not exist, this one should be the one which remains.
15. When you are flexible enough to accept any authority such as of one who is dumber than you, mean, unfair, unjust the self discipline which results in your soul gives you an incredible capacity for life.
16. This is what occurs in the local church where both flexibility and self discipline under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is needed and these develop incredible capacity for life.
17. The local church is not a social organization nor a lonely heart club and where you can take your NASTY personality and everyone is required to be nice to you nor where your ego is stimulated by approbation and power lust because you sang so beautifully in the choir or worked so hard in the church.
18. The local church is the most strict academic organization that has ever existed throughout the entire history of humanity and it has only existed since AD30 and since it began it has been supposed to be in the biblical concept of it one of strict academic discipline every devised.
19. Thus the local church is a function of the Grace of God as provision for a place to learn Bible Doctrine.
20. Many local churches fail from internal disintegration into some system of apostasy or become so weak that they must find crutches in other stronger local churches and band together to form a “denomination”.
 - i. The first of these was the roman church and it was and they still are an attack on the proper function of the local church just as apostasy is an attack on the ability of the local church to fulfill its proper objectives.
21. The proper function of the local church does not mean you will not make good friends from sitting next to people day after day as these will be some of the best friends you ever meet.
22. The local church includes the:
 - i. Pastor Teacher who has absolute authority
 - ii. Deacons who have administrative authority
 - iii. Congregation which when assembled are under strict discipline and students without portfolio.

E. The Right Pastor Teacher for each believer:

1. This is also a provision of grace where the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher provides the ability and authority to communicate Bible Doctrine via monologue
2. This is a grace gift from God the Holy Spirit and no Pastor Teacher ever has earned or deserved it.
3. POSSESSING the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher DOES NOT make you automatically a Pastor Teacher.
4. In order to become and function as a Pastor Teacher in a pulpit of a local church there is an incredible amount of training which is required.
5. These men do not have any authority just from possessing the gift of Pastor Teacher as this authority only comes when they are called to a local church.
6. This is a gift only for males and is a sovereign decision of God the Holy Spirit and not earned or deserved and must go through excruciating training.
7. The DANGER is that once the person completes his training and goes to a local church he may not be able to handle the incredible authority he has which requires a great deal of training and self discipline and avoidance of Blind Arrogance as a destructive system.
8. Arrogance is always a 2 headed monster
 - i. Pride is always hooked up to something else in arrogance and is only seen when there is no pressure put on the person and his pride.

- ii. When you put pressure on pride such as some system of discipline, military or academic, or receiving some adversity in life, then up comes the counter part to PRIDE.
 - iii. This could be Jealousy, Cowardice, Any Mental Attitude Sins, Verbal Sin, Overt sin, an adverse principle in life or something else.
 - iv. Anyone who has pride cannot handle authority given to him ever.
 - v. Pride therefore limits capacity to handle authority or function in leadership.
- F. Royal priesthood of the believer who is a part of the Royal Family of God.
 - 1. The purpose of this royal priesthood is for privacy of reception of Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. Every believer has a right to their privacy in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, to live life as unto the Lord, to reach Spiritual Maturity and become Spiritually self sustaining and this right is exercised by function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception daily.
 - 3. As you take in Bible Doctrine constantly and continually under privacy you then begin to grow and live life as unto the Lord and this prevents the intrusion of some legalist with his own false ideas telling you how to live and run your life.
 - 4. To protect you from legalism and give you opportunity for privacy in learning Bible Doctrine.
 - 5. Whether you go to the local church for bible class or NOT is between YOU and the Lord.
 - 6. Being in a local church congregation you have the right and privilege of keeping your privacy and if you want it violated it is a matter of friendship and your own volition doing it.
 - 7. Protection of the privacy of the congregation is the Job of the Pastor Teacher and this often means the elimination of gossips from the congregation all together.
 - 8. This is a grace gift with many privileges and to ensure privacy and avoid bullying and to give a chance to learn Bible Doctrine you enter the congregation and learn as a group.
 - i. There is no such thing as 1 on 1 or KEY people who meet with the Pastor Teacher and pray and no such think as trying to build up people and it is 1 Pastor Teacher to the whole congregation.
 - ii. Giving special time to “KEY” persons in the congregation is an apostate function of those who do not teach Bible Doctrine and it is a substitute in the form of human relations.
 - 9. Every royal priest must construct his own altar in the soul and this is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- G. Ministry of God the Holy Spirit
 - 1. The aristocracy of the Royal Family of God is a part of this ministry.
 - 2. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit enters the body of every believer and enters all believers into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 3. Not only does God the Holy Spirit indwell the body of the believer for protection in the Angelic Conflict
 - 4. He also controls the soul of the believer when the believer is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but when the believer commits sin he loses this Filling of God the Holy Spirit and control of his soul by God the Holy Spirit and we have quenching and grieving God the Holy Spirit.
 - 5. This is the provision of God to enable the learning of Bible Doctrine and having the ability to fulfill the objectives and enjoy the blessings God has for us.
 - 6. For the first time in Human History and throughout the Church Age the body of every believer is indwelt by God the Holy Spirit
 - 7. The sealing of God the Holy Spirit is the security for the Royal Family of God for all time and eternity.
 - 8. This makes every believer a royal ambassador for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - 9. Filling of God the Holy Spirit provides the means by which we learn Bible Doctrine.
 - 10. God the Holy Spirit indwells all believers permanently and fills the soul of the believer when the believer is not in carnality and in this way God the Holy Spirit contributes to

the advance of every believer toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

11. Objectivity, self discipline, the ability to assimilate Bible Doctrine all demand function of God the Holy Spirit.
- H. The Human Spirit
1. The Human Spirit is the residence for Bible Doctrine learned under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for distribution into the soul of the believer. Rom 8:16
- I. Laws of Divine Establishment
1. These are laws provided by God whereby the Human Race can perpetuate itself and whereby human freedom, the greatest blessing ever granted mankind, is protected.
 2. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment the nation protects the freedom and privacy of the local church and this is where there is the principle of universal military service.
 3. System of Law in a nation designed to protect the freedom, privacy, property and life of law abiding citizens and to PUNISH criminals.
 4. We have Law Enforcement personnel as well as military personnel which are responsible to protecting our freedom and all its principles.
 5. The believer who rejects the authority of the police will also reject the authority of the Pastor Teacher
 6. The believer who rejects the authority of parents and teachers will also reject Bible Doctrine.
 7. The believer who rejects legitimate delegated authority will also resist the authority of the Pastor Teacher in communication of Bible Doctrine.
 8. These provide freedom to assimilate Bible Doctrine consistently.
- J. Under grace we are able to gather together and enjoy the refreshment of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Lesson #19 Series # 469 2Tim 1:13

- I. Principles:
- A. ***Any cursing which comes into the life of the believer is a direct result of that believer's VOLITION intruding on the Plan of God for his life.***
 - B. The finest people you will ever meet and greatest friends which we will ever have this side of heaven will be believers with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 1. This does not mean they will be people who can "HELP" you in some special way or advance your cause or be a source of your ARROGANT NAME DROPPING.
 - C. Not only does doctrine provide phenomenal things which we have studied to every believer who has the audacity and persistent dogged desire and self discipline and flexibility and objectivity to remain under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and is consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization but also it provides for us great friendships and personal sources of refreshment from believers we know.
 1. The most important things in this life do not include excelling above others in any area of life or become famous in some way but to live life day in and day out as a source of refreshment to others.
 2. This is not bleeding heard liberal do goodism but LIFE itself becoming a source of blessing to others.
 3. People constantly look for someone to boost them further up the ladder of success in life while they shove their foot in the face of their former friends and move up another rung.
 4. The issue for every believer must be primarily Bible Doctrine and attaining category I love of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the friendships and romantic love relationships will be the inevitable result.
- II. The Doctrine of Refreshment **2Tim 1:16**
- A. If you stick with Bible Doctrine long enough you will be a refreshment to others.
 1. Being a refreshment to others is one of the greatest things which can ever happen to you.

2. It is a system of dynamics which are not obvious but very important and goes with having happiness, capacity for life in all categories and being able to MEET adversities.
3. There is in the soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the ABILITY to be loyal and love someone without jealousy, rancor or bitterness, to admire someone without personally having qualms with them, to have friends without competing with them as generally occurs in our society.

B. Definition:

1. Refreshment in the English language generally concerns food or beverage is has a greater connotation in the bible and means to restore the strength of a soul, to revive the Divine Viewpoint in the function of a soul, and to do so apart from the function of the Pastor Teacher teaching Bible Doctrine.
 - i. To restore the soul of an individual, provide stimulation and blessing for the soul of the individual, without TEACHING them Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. This is our life becoming a source of stimulation and blessing and refreshment in the soul of others when we reach a certain point in the Spiritual Life.
2. It also means to provide what is needed for spiritual blessing in time of adversity and disaster.
3. (gr) Anapsucho == Again and Again in the soul, to breath again and again or revive the soul.
4. Our life can and should be a source of revival to the souls in our periphery and as a Super Grace believer or one approaching it, a source of blessing to others without getting into competition or putting them down or usual sarcasm in the relationship which is so common.
5. There is a place for true sentimental friendship and HONOR and not the emotional aspects of sentimentalism as with the holy rollers and legalists who eliminate rationalism in favor of Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
6. A person taking in Bible Doctrine has their soul leveled off and they can provide a source of warmth, friendship, stability, encouragement, and all the things which make friendship a reality.
7. This requires the total elimination of all aspects of legalism in the local church and the life of the believer.
8. There must be Bible Doctrine available on a daily basis for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization
9. You never have to run around to find nice people who often are only going to try to butter you up and drag you away from Bible Doctrine and the nicest people we will ever find in life are among those who are consistently under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
10. You will never find refreshment in members of your family who don't take in Bible Doctrine and when you lean on family who do not have Bible Doctrine you are displaying a great internal WEAKNESS in your own character.
11. You should respect and love your parents and children no matter who far off they are from the reality of Bible Doctrine husbands who have loony wives and wives who have loony husbands.
12. When you lean on family such as girls running home to mother when something goes wrong with their marriage and the same for the boys this is absolutely NO GOOD.

C. Ministry of Refreshment in alleviation of Saul's Psychosis.

1. Saul apparently had a temporary psychotic condition which erupted from time to time when he was under certain types of pressure.
 - i. It was apparently triggered by jealousy.
 - ii. When he became jealous it triggered some psychopathic attitude and very little could be done to stop it.

v23: And it came to pass when the evil spirit permitted by God came to Saul to pressure him from the outside, David would take up his lyre and play it with his hand; so Saul was refreshed or tranquilized from the music, and would become well, and the evil spirit would depart from him.

- iii. This is the permissive control of Human History by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ allowing the function of demon influence in the life of reversionistic Saul.
 - iv. The music David played reached the soul of Saul and brought his soul back to reality and temporarily alleviated his psychotic condition.
 - v. Refreshment coming to his soul alleviated his suffering and caused him to calm down.
 - vi. This was early historic MUSICAL therapy.
2. This refreshment is soul recovery from some adverse condition whether it is psychosis neurosis, influence of evil, reversionism or some other apostasy.
 3. Refreshment connotes soul recovery and soul blessing.

D. Doctrinal refreshment:

Prov 25:13

v13: Like the cold of melted snow in the HOT time of harvest is a faithful messenger or water boy, the Pastor Teacher, to those who send for him, the congregation he refreshes the soul of his masters.

1. Refreshment that comes to the believer comes through the one who is faithful in communication of Bible Doctrine which provides spiritual refreshment to the souls of believers.
2. The point of TOTAL refreshment is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who is a source of refreshment to all those in his periphery.
3. This is part of blessing by association of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

E. Rejection of refreshment means national discipline and disaster.

Is 28:8-14

v8: All tables are full of filthy vomit, there is not a clean place.

v9: To whom shall he teach knowledge, to whom shall be caused to understand the doctrine of the message, those children just weaned from the milk, NO! those children just taken from the mothers Breast? NO!

v10: From precept of categorical doctrine must be upon precept of categorical doctrine (principles built on categorical teaching), precept of categorical doctrine upon precept of categorical doctrine, line of exegetical teaching must be upon line of exegetical teaching (teaching Bible Doctrine expository methods), line of exegetical teaching upon line of exegetical teaching, a little teaching here, a little teaching there.

v11: For with jabbering or stammering lips of alien articulation and by means of gentile foreign languages and other languages will He speak to this people about the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline, and communicate Bible Doctrine to this people (Sign of the coming of the 5th cycle of discipline)

v12: to whom he has said, "This doctrinal teaching is the rest or refreshment; therefore give rest to the weary; therefore this is refreshment"; but they would not hear even things refreshing or stimulating.

v13: However the word of the LORD was to them precept of categorical teaching upon precept of categorical teaching, precept upon precept, line of exegetical teaching upon line of exegetical teaching, line upon line, a little teaching of a daily portion here, a little teaching of a daily portion there; that upon rejection of it they might go into reversionism, and fall backward into apostasy, and be torn up by evil, therefore snared by reversionism and destroyed by their enemies

v14: Therefore hear the word of the LORD, you scoffers with Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, who rule this people in Jerusalem (Acts 3:19), repent and change your mind about Bible Doctrine and return and recover from your reversionism in order that your sins might be wiped away and that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord!

1. A serious problem in a nation is not the fault of the children but of the parents who reject Bible Doctrine.
2. V11 is the first prophecy of the Gift of Tongues speaking in foreign languages as a warning of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to Israel.
3. Times of refreshing from the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by the people in a nation are the only thing which can save a nation in reversionism.

4. This is not an increase in evangelism in the nation but there must be a revival of Bible Doctrine in the souls of believers.

F. Response to the word of God is called refreshment:

Rom 15:32

1. Paul wants to come to give a bible conference and they need it and he wants to teach them Bible Doctrine they need but he also says that he wants to be refreshed by Paul when he comes.
2. Many will be a refreshment to Paul in Cat III Love from his friends who he loves and who stimulates his soul.

2Cor 7:13

3. A bible conference can be a source of great mutual refreshment if the host or organizer teaches the word and those who are his friends become a source of blessing when he is there.
4. Titus was a great bible teacher and was a troubleshooter for Paul because his understanding of Bible Doctrine was phenomenal and his communication gift gave him great ability to straighten out many situations.

G. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has a ministry in refreshment as part of blessing by association

1Cor 16:17-18

1. These are 3 men who Paul had as lifetime friends and they came to Paul and were a source of great blessing to him because of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Philemon 7, 20

2Tim 1:16

2. Onesiphorus was one of those believer who was a great refreshment to Paul.

III. 3 principles in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:

A. Faith:

1. You must learn basic Bible Doctrine before more advanced Bible Doctrine can be metabolized properly and stored in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
2. (FF) Always encourage new believers to Bible Doctrine to be consistent in attending Bible Doctrine classes and also to on their own time go back and acquire and accumulate basic doctrines in order to be able to actually advance in the Spiritual Life.

B. Love here is referring to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which is essential for learning any bible doctrine.

Rom 5:5, Gal 5:22. 1Cor 13

1. This is a reference to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Relaxed Mental Attitude which results from that.
2. Being under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit we become objective which will allow us to take in Bible Doctrine which we might otherwise resist or resent and thus advance in spite of our personality or personal hangups.
3. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is again essential for function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and includes:
 - i. Objectivity
 - ii. Poise
 - iii. Strict Discipline
4. 1Cor 6:19-20 tells us that the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit only applies to the BODY of the believer in order to keep the believer from being demon possessed and is part of the divine protection of the Royal Family of God..
5. We can have the Filling of God the Holy Spirit any time we function under the rebound procedure and then God the Holy Spirit controls the soul.
6. Carnality takes us out from under Filling of God the Holy Spirit but is a simple thing to recover from using the rebound procedure.
7. We can do this because of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross for all personal sin which are a result of function of the area of

- weakness of the Old Sin Nature, but at the same time he rejected Human Good and Evil which come from the area of strength of the Old Sin Nature.
8. Evil and Human Good must continue to be an issue throughout the Angelic Conflict because they are part and parcel of the policy of Satan ruling this world.
 9. Evil and Reversionism are not the same as sin.
 10. Evil is our greatest enemy and Evil is something we THINK (the policy of Satan) while sin is something we most often do and recovery from carnality is instantaneous from use of rebound but recovery from evil and reversionism may take 2 or 3 years just to get back to where you entered reversionism.
 11. David when he sinned with Bathsheba was in Super Grace and sinned and received a great deal of Divine Discipline but was still in Super Grace Status Quo.
 12. Solomon however was in reversionism and when he recovered wrote song of Solomon and Ecclesiastes showing us the type of Divine Discipline for reversionism.
 13. Apostasy is the coin of degeneracy of the believer and one side is REVERSIONISM and the other side is EVIL.
 14. A person in reversionism MUST rebound to recover the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in order to be able to listen to Bible Doctrine and understand it.
 15. Reversionists can be if they use rebound be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but still have a lot of thoughts related to evil NOT SINFUL thoughts and all of this evil thinking causes him to resist Bible Doctrine and it is very difficult to get out of reversionism.
 16. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit is never an issue and all believers after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are indwelt by God the Holy Spirit whether spiritual or carnal.
 17. Filling of God the Holy Spirit is an easy thing to lose and easy to recover as well.
 18. In order to advance in the Spiritual Life or recover from reversionism there must be the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but being MINUS Bible Doctrine we are in both situations out of balance.
 19. When we are consistent under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception we build more and more Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore become more and more balanced.
 20. Timothy does not have a right Pastor Teacher in Ephesus but does have copies of all the pastoral epistles from all the other churches in the ancient world whereby he has learned Bible Doctrine and was the basis of his reversion recovery.
 21. A good source of progression for bible study is Ephesians, Hebrews, Colossians, Philippians, Timothy.
 - i. The book of Romans is NOT for new believers at all and will turn believers away from Bible Doctrine because of the complexity of it.
 22. All reversionists have an area of great hypersensitivity and fell like the Bible Doctrine they hear is directed toward them and this is terribly difficult.
 23. Reversionism gets into the soul and destroys the soul while carnality is very easy to get out of.

2Tim 1:13

v13: Retain or Keep on having; from continued recovery from reversionism and continued Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine; a categorical outline, pattern, standard, delineation of healthy, sound, correct doctrines which correct doctrines you have heard, under strict academic discipline and the Grace Apparatus for Perception, from the immediate source of me, Paul, by or in the sphere of, metabolized doctrine and by means of love as Filling of God the Holy Spirit, which is in union with Christ Jesus;

Lesson #20 Series # 469 2Tim 1:14

- I. Freedom through military victory
 - A. Marine Corps Birthday – MOH recipients belonging to Berachah Battalion.
 - B. Men the Col Knew in WWII in the Corps

1. Joseph Jacob Foss Cpt USMC Reserve, Marine Fighting Squadron 121, 1st Marine Aircraft Wing, Guadalcanal, 9, Oct – 19 Nov 1942
 - i. After the War was Gov South Dakota
2. John Lucian Smith, Maj USMC, Fighting Squadron 223, From OK, Solomon Is, Aug + Sept 1942
3. R. A. Pitman Sgt, USMC 24, July 1966, I Company, Vietnam

II. Addendum Doctrine of Evil - Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil

A. Man in the innocence of the garden had 4 categories of trees: **Gen 2:9-**, the first 3 are demonstrations of the GRACE blessing from God to Man in the garden.

1. Trees desirable to the sight designed for man's soul pleasure
 - i. This was a matter of blessing and aesthetics of the soul.
 - ii. These reminded man of his Status Quo of Innocence provided by the Grace of God.
 - iii. Innocence represents reaping what God had sown and the stimulation provided by these trees was a reminder of the stimulation of the soul of man by the daily provision of Bible Doctrine taught by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ each evening in the garden.
 - iv. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul gave Adam capacity for life and appreciation of the trees in this category.
 - v. This took care of one part of the needs of man in blessing to the soul.
2. Trees good for food
 - i. This was provided for the body designed to satisfy the provide for nourishment of the body and again in innocence Man reaps with God sows under GRACE
 - ii. Adam did not earn nor deserve what God provided and the stimulation of his taste and provision for his nourishment was a reminder of the perfect Grace of God.
 - iii. Thus the body was taken care of and was home to the soul.
3. The Tree of Lives
 - i. It is in the middle of the garden and was the tree of Positive Volition
 - ii. This was only available only as long as man remained under Positive Volition toward the Grace of God.
 - iii. This tree was no good to man in spiritual death because it represented a part of the Plan of God for man in innocence.
 - iv. Once man departed from innocence this is of no value to man.
 - v. This tree provided for man as RULER of the world as long as Adam ruled.
 - vi. This was the Grace of God as provision for man to resolve the Angelic Conflict and the Appeal of Satan with regard to the judgment rendered condemning him to the Lake of Fire.
 - vii. God answered the appeal of Satan (How can a loving God justly condemn his creatures to the Lake of Fire?) by the creation of man in a perfect situation.
 - viii. God created the Body, Soul and Spirit and created the trees for man's needs.
 - ix. This tree was to give man the capacity for life in order for him to enjoy his life in the Status Quo of Innocence.
 - x. Adam was commanded to Eat from the trees of Food and Lives but forbidden the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - xi. This tree was associated with man's Positive Volition in Innocence to perpetuate Grace blessing as long as man was ruler of the world.
 - xii. Therefore the Tree of Life is associated with the perfect environment in the Garden and Life in the garden plus its perpetuation as long as man was under Positive Volition to the Plan of God this tree was available and used.
 - xiii. This Tree of Life was not a tree of ETERNAL life but a tree of capacity for life in order that Adam could appreciate what God had provided.
 - xiv. When man sinned he was driven out of the garden and cut off from this tree **Gen 3:24**

- xv. If Man in spiritual death had eaten from the Tree of Lives his volition or free will would no longer have been an issue in resolving the Angelic Conflict.
 - xvi. He would have a capacity for something he could no longer enjoy or have.
 - xvii. Therefore it was incompatible with the Plan of God to provide the tree of lives outside the garden for man but he provided another tree of Life the CROSS of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - xviii. The purpose in creating man could not be perpetuated after the fall of man and still have this tree of lives.
 - xix. The purpose of Creation is to perpetuate Man after the fall and the Angelic Conflict is to go on even when man fails by cutting man off from the tree of life.
 - xx. The new tree after the fall was the cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this is the tree of Positive Volition after the fall even when man is born spiritually dead.
 - xxi. If man in spiritual death had access to the Tree of Lives he would have capacity with no place to go with it.
 - xxii. Capacity for life plus spiritual death means capacity is cut off as there is no way to appreciate with GOD has provided in spiritual death therefore the tree of lives was cut of so that man would not be faced with this frustration.
4. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
- i. Also in the middle of the garden and was the tree of Negative Volition.
- B. Capacity for Life and the Tree of Lives:
- 1. The 3rd category is called the Tree of Lives
 - 2. The tree was only available as long as man remained in innocence (without knowledge of the plan and policy of Satan) or under Positive Volition toward the Grace of God
 - 3. This tree was no good to man in the Status Quo of spiritual death and would not give him Eternal Life in spiritual death but only a capacity he could not use in spiritual death.
 - 4. The tree was provided for man when he was Ruler of the World and he only had this Status Quo until he sinned.
 - 5. This tree was provision of the Grace of God for man who was created to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
 - i. How could a new creature created from the hand of God ever appreciate the Grace of God unless he had something he could EAT which made him appreciate it.
 - ii. Eventually capacity for life would be developed from the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came in the cool of the evening into the garden to teach man doctrine.
 - iii. Man Day 1 has to have perfect appreciation for what God had provided and the first thing man ate in the garden was from the tree of lives and it did not give him Eternal Life but capacity to appreciate GRACE.
 - 6. Man was created with free will in order to resolve Satan's appeal of his judgment which was the Lake of Fire **Matt 25:41**
 - i. Man could choose with Positive Volition the tree of Lives or with Negative Volition the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil all bad.
 - ii. Good and Evil are BOTH BAD and are Satan's genius policies.
 - iii. Man did not need to know either GOOD or EVIL as ruler of the world.
 - iv. Man had a relationship with God through CREATION Not regeneration and in this GRACE relationship there are 2 things which man did not need:
 - a. He did not need to DO any good
 - b. He did not need to THINK any evil
 - c. Therefore God did not give him either of these.
 - v. Knowing about Good and Evil are only good for describing spiritual death.
 - vi. Good and evil belong to spiritual death not the Plan of God.
 - 7. The Tree of Lives was provided to be associated with man's Positive Volition in Innocence to perpetuate GRACE blessing and man's rulership of the world.

- i. Man In innocence was Adam and the smartest man ever to live and it has been downhill since then.
 - ii. Innocence does not mean stupidity in Adam as he was the best of the Human Race in all of Human History in every category.
 - iii. Innocence meant that man had his relationship with God through creation and he was created without sin to resolve the issue of the Angelic Conflict.
 - iv. He had to have free will to choose constantly
 - a. Positive Volition eating repeatedly from the tree of lives
 - b. Negative Volition eating ONCE from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and spiritual death occurs and you lose control of the world.
8. Therefore the tree of lives is associated with perfect environment and life in the garden and perpetuation of the capacity of that life under Positive Volition toward the original GRACE provision of God. **Gen 2:9, 3:22**
- i. God never gives you something without capacity to enjoy it.
 - ii. If God gave man this perfect environment of the garden and when he wanted to enjoy it he simply had to go grab some of the fruit on the tree of lives and eat it and then would appreciate all that came from God..
 - iii. There was original Grace before Original sin
 - iv. Original Grace means original provision and this means the tree of life, the capacity to appreciate immediately what God provided.
 - v. When man looked on the woman God provided he had immediate appreciation for her (And it GOES ON DAILY ff).
 - vi. Ever wonder why man was not QUEER or HOMOSEXUAL???!!!
 - vii. EVER wonder why man did not go for the animals but for this DOLL God created???
 - viii. BECAUSE HE HAD CAPACITY TO APPRECIATE HER!!!
 - ix. One nice thing about the Spiritual Life is that it give you normal appreciation for things and homosexuality is not a result of childhood environment but **means that these people have an abnormal twisted distorted soul.**
 - x. These people are NOT SICK but are carnal.
 - xi. WHY did Man appreciate the first woman who was in fact his downfall and after her fall by eating the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil Adam did not reach for the TREE of LIVES but took the fruit from her hand choosing HER outside the garden rather than life in the garden.
9. When man sinned he was driven out of the garden and cut off from the Tree of Lives **Gen 3:24**
- i. The next time it is seen in human history is in Eternity.
10. If man in spiritual death had eaten from the tree of lives his volition or free will would have been involved in taking from the tree of lives, he would have had no appreciation for what God has provided being SPIRITUALLY DEAD.
- i. How can one appreciate what God provided when you are spiritually dead.
 - ii. Once you know good and evil you know Satan's plan is, this is his policy and the means by which he rules the world.
 - iii. Once you know Satan's plan you no longer know God's Plan because you are under spiritual death.
 - iv. Man became instantly spiritually dead and would not even want to eat of the tree of lives because he had no capacity to appreciate the tree or what it stood for.
 - v. HE WAS DEAD IN HIS SOUL AND HAD NO WAY TO APPRECIATE WITH GOD HAD PROVIDED.
 - vi. The tree of life would do him no good for he would have had no capacity to appreciate the tree and in eating from the tree of life he would have capacity to appreciate but would not comprehend what God had given him to appreciate.

- vii. In the issue of salvation after Positive Volition is expressed toward the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, God the Holy Spirit must restore the Human Spirit, in essence reawakening man's ability to appreciate what God has provided.
 - viii. Man has no appreciation of what God provides and to give the appreciation by the tree of life man not comprehending what God gives could still not appreciate it, having nothing to appreciate it with, no Human Spirit.
11. The purpose in creation of man could not be perpetuated after the fall of man through the tree of lives.
 12. The purpose of creation is perpetuated after the fall by cutting man off from the tree of lives causing man to focus attention on the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 13. The new tree of life after the fall is the cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and no one appreciates anything which God provides until he eats from the new tree of life through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - i. Only the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ can appreciate the Plan of God and become oriented to it and only the believer who reaches and remains in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will.
 14. Man's nonmeritorious Positive Volition ie Faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is still the means of resolving the Angelic Conflict.
 - i. Positive Volition in the garden in innocence was expressed toward the Plan of God by eating of the Tree of Lives DAILY.
 - ii. After the fall of man Positive Volition is still expressed in a Nonmeritorious way by eating once from the tree of life through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - iii. Therefore the Issue of the Angelic Conflict goes right on and God does not have to say, WHAT A WASTE MAN BLUE IT LET'S THROW HIM OUT AND TRY AGAIN WITH ANOTHER TYPE OF CREATURE.
 - iv. God knew how man would think and act and therefore made provision for it in every circumstance.
 15. By remaining the garden with the tree of lives under spiritual death man would have been perpetuated under the domination of Satan which would have doomed him to perpetual slavery under spiritual death, NO WAY OUT.
 - i. If you could find and get back into the garden now you would be doomed to slaver to Satan forever.
 - ii. Under the Status Quo of being thrown out of the garden man is able to break from slavery to Satan and his policy and plan through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. The old trees had to go and a New tree had to come the Cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 16. Furthermore, the tree of life in the garden couldn't provide a solution to the fall of man and subsequent spiritual death.
 17. The tree of life could not provide redemption, reconciliation or propitiation because in the garden these were not issues.
 - i. The tree of life won't even be seen again until the end of the millennium Rev 22.
 - ii. What cold the tree of life do?
 - a. In the garden give capacity for life and to appreciate god's provision through Creation.
 - i) Man's relationship with God in the garden was through creation relationship
 - ii) Now man's relationship with God is through REGENERATION relationship.
 - b. How could a created being the instant he came from the hand of God how could he appreciate what God provided? He ate from the Tree of Lives and was GIVEN capacity.

18. Therefore the fall of man provides a new tree of life and perpetuates man's continuation as the solution to the Angelic Conflict AFTER THE FALL.
19. The salvation work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross is the new tree of life
 - i. This was not needed in the garden were man's relationship with God was based on creation he not needing salvation and regeneration.
 - ii. You only need salvation when in spiritual death and man was not spiritually dead until he ate of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
 - iii. Once you have the policy of Good and Evil in your soul then you are dead spiritually.
20. The Tree of Life was taken out of man's reach in the garden so that the Cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ could come into focus for man's eternal salvation.
 - i. Man entered the world before the fall as a created being.
 - ii. There were 2 beings created by God in the garden both under a relationship based on CREATION.
 - iii. Man could not reproduce under creation since the relationship was a CREATION one where God must do the work.
 - iv. God could have CREATED MORE people but that would have made MORE complications.
 - v. Adam and Ishah had lots of sex but no reproduction as sex was for Pleasure not reproduction until after the fall.
 - vi. Man and woman were created as adults and with a relationship with God.
 - vii. This only lasted till the fall and NOW believe it or NOT people get into the world by sexual intercourse resulting in reproduction being BORN into the world.
 - viii. Being born into the world they are now born spiritually dead and cannot have any relationship with God.
 - ix. To have a relationship with God you must be REBORN spiritually, "born again" in order to have regeneration of the Human Spirit by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
21. By expulsion from the garden after the fall the Cross remains the issue in entering into a relationship with God **John 3:36**.
 - i. In the garden before the fall man entered the earth by CREATION directly by God therefore had a relationship with God.
 - ii. Man being alone in the garden God CREATED a woman from man.
 - iii. Man got his woman from God, God gave man the woman because man had a relationship with God by CREATION.
 - iv. When man lost that relationship with God based on creation being spiritually dead no one else ever has gotten into this world since then by CREATION.
 - v. Sex was given a secondary use after the fall which causes fertilization and conception resulting in BIRTH under PAIN from beginning to end of a child.
 - vi. 9 months of uncomfortable at best pregnancy, Painful Child birth, 20+ years of the child being in the home and not knowing what to do with them.
 - vii. Being born without a relationship with God man comes up with some really WEIRD Ideas.
 - viii. We cannot come up with a relationship with God on our own being born under spiritual death and the Old Sin Nature.
 - ix. Therefore we must be BORN AGAIN and regenerated by God the Holy Spirit to have a relationship with God.
 - x. Adam had a relationship with God not based on salvation therefore all he had to do was pull the fruit of the Tree of Lives off the tree and eat and it gave him instant capacity to appreciate what God has provided.

C. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil

1. This is not knowledge of the DIFFERENCE BETWEEN GOOD AND EVIL.
 - i. When you eat from this tree you have both good and evil they go together.

- ii. These are partners and Satan is in the Good deed business and always has been.
 - iii. The motivation for doing good deeds under Satan's plan is the thought process of thinking in terms of the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL.
2. This is the tree related to man's Negative Volition in the garden.
 3. This tree perfectly portrays man's relationship with God in the garden as GRACE
 - i. Man could not eat of this tree in the garden because as soon as he did he was disoriented to GRACE
 - ii. Grace does not Need Human Good nor Evil and both are antagonistic to GRACE.
 - iii. On the 200 anniversary of the United States of America and today on the 246th anniversary of the United States of America our problem is too much GOOD.
 - iv. Our legislators are too goody goody and all try to make the world better by their plans and pass laws to do it.
 - v. A perfect illustration had been an attack on General Motors who had done more for the nation than the legislature had done in a long long time.
 - vi. The Last good law passed by our government was hanging Horse thieves.
 - vii. They pass laws that kill the goose who lays the golden egg and that you must be NICE to certain kinds of people who when they came to this country they were too STUPID to learn our language and get Anglo Saxon culture in a hurry.
 - viii. This says we must be NICE to these dummies these illegals, these moslems, (ff).
 - ix. We must give to them things to keep them alive and bring them up to our level of prosperity and this is NOT Americanism.
 - x. Americanism is We are all recognized as citizens (NOT the ILLEGALS) we go as far as we can with our own freedom and ability as long as we do not violate the law which is designed to protect freedom, privacy and property.
 - xi. Immigrants legal or not must LEARN OUR WAYS and we are not to learn theirs or appreciate them at all.
 - xii. This has not worked this way because of all the goodys in congress who have been eating OVERTIME the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil which is still around.
 - xiii. Satan is ruler of this world and when Man fell he lost the crown and Satan took it and put it on and looked at Adam and shah and said "you two are naked get dressed!".
 - xiv. Satan is a goody as well and in the area of Right Man and Right Woman in adjustment to each other they must be Naked NOT dressed but Satan said "get dressed" and this was Human GOOD which came from EVIL.
 4. In the garden man was ruler of the world and this depended on his relationship with God and his sustaining grace.
 - i. Any time man has a great thing it always depends on God.
 5. This tree represents the entire policy of Satan as ruler of the world in 2 parts:
 - i. Human Good
 - ii. Evil
 - iii. Human Good is evil and Evil results in Human Good.
 - iv. Both are totally antagonistic to Grace.
 6. This Tree was Forbidden because it represents everything which hinders man's relationship with God.
 - i. Human Good and Evil hinder man's relationship with God.
 7. In innocence man did not have to know good and evil to have relationship with God.
 8. Man's relationship with God in the garden was GRACE.
 - i. Grace rejects and excludes Human Good and Evil.
 9. Along with the tree of lives the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was located in the middle of the garden which dramatizes the importance of man's Negative Volition toward Good and Evil and Positive Volition toward the Plan of God.
 - i. The Tree of Lives represented God's Plan
 - ii. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil represented Satan's Plan.

- iii. All the time man was in the garden he had to choose one over the other.
- iv. If man consistently chose for the Plan of God he would rule with world
- v. If man chose even once for the plan of Satan then Satan would rule the world.
- vi. Whichever way man would go the Angelic Conflict would be resolved through man and his volition because God sent his Son to perpetuate the volition test.

III. The Importance of the Divine prohibition: **Gen 2:16-17**

- A. God commanded man that he MAY eat from any tree in the garden.
 - 1. From the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil he MUST NOT eat from it because the day you eat from that tree Dying You will die, or you will be Dead Dead.
 - 2. Both times it refers to Spiritual Death not physical death. (Changed later to Dying spiritually you will eventually die Physically)
 - 3. Physical Death not an issue in perpetuation and resolution of the Angelic Conflict and did not become an issue until after the fall and only then 900 years after the fall.
- B. Note that spiritual death is NOT ONLY no relationship with God but includes cognizance of the plan and policy of Satan, the systems of Human Good and Evil.
 - 1. This is where you can have PSEUDO Super Grace since knowledge of Good and Evil is cognizance of the plan of Satan.
 - 2. Man did not need to rule the world understanding GOOD and EVIL, Satan's plan only the Plan of God.
 - 3. God provided 3 categories of trees so that he could understand the Plan of God and function properly under it and it was 3 to 1, 3 trees for grace 1 tree against grace.
- C. The presence of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil is part of the Angelic Conflict since there must be a bonifide challenge to VOLITION.
- D. God has to present Satan's plan as a choice for man's free will and both are there in 2 trees in the middle of the garden.
 - 1. As long as man ate from the tree of lives he was choosing God's Plan but one day he ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and then chose for Satan's plan.
 - 2. This immediately made Satan ruler of the world.
- E. God in grace warning prohibited eating of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil Satan's plan.
 - 1. God could not force man to NOT eat of this tree because VOLITION was the true issue of the Angelic Conflict.
 - 2. In meeting Satan's appeal to the Lake of Fire God had to create a creature who had free will also.
- F. For that Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil is the sum total of the genius of Satan.
 - 1. Satan's Plan includes both good and evil and the Evil policy and plan of Satan results in the function of Human Good.
- G. That tree is the way Satan has run the world since the fall of Adam.
- H. Therefore the Tree of Lives was provided for man to have capacity for Grace
- I. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil is prohibited since it would and did destroy that capacity of man and make him spiritually dead.
- J. The 2 trees represent the issue of man's volition in Human History
- K. One tree is grace blessing the other cursing from the evil genius of Satan.
- L. Disobedience to God regarding the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil meant not only spiritual death but coming under rulership of Satan.
- M. The summary of Satan's rulership policy is Human Good and Evil.
- N. When you understand Human Good and Evil you will then understand the genius policy of Satan's rulership of this world and also you will understand the superior genius policy of God as GRACE.
 - 1. It takes a LONG time to understand the grace Plan of God from a great deal of Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. By instinct we are all born under spiritual death and the rulership of Satan therefore from birth our instincts are in the direction of Human Good and Evil and it takes a very long time to understand the Grace Plan of God.

- O. There are 2 periods of human history where man rules the world under the grace policy of God.
 1. Adam in the garden for an unknown period of time.
 2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the millennium for 1000 years.
- P. Both of these periods are characterized by perfect environment and both end with man in revolt against the perfect policy of Grace.
- Q. The first revolution was the fall of man and the 2nd will be the GOG revolution at the millennium end and both are against GRACE and PERFECT environment.
- R. In both cases the revolution occurred because some segment of the Human Race did NOT understand Satan's policy of Human Good and evil but accepted it instead of Grace
 1. In the first case the woman did not understand Human Good and Evil but accepted it
 2. In the 2nd case the unbeliever of the millennium living in perfect environment under grace and do not understand Satan's policy but accept it.
 3. In both cases these people reacted to GRACE
 4. The woman did not even listen when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ taught Bible Doctrine in the garden.
 5. The unbelievers in the millennium react toward grace as well.
- S. For the unbeliever Satan's policy of Human Good and evil can only produce spiritual death in time and the 2nd death in eternity in the Lake of Fire.
- T. For the believer Satan's policy of Human Good and Evil can only produce reversionism with loss of grace blessing in time and LOSS OF SURPASSING GRACE REWARD AND BLESSING IN ETERNITY.
 1. Satan is still offering the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and all the Human Good systems incorporated in his plan
 2. We constantly today suffering from the good of the plan of Satan.
- U. God has invented a protection against Human Good and Evil
 1. In the garden it was the Tree of Lives
 2. Today it is Bible Doctrine
 3. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul insulates the believer against the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and provides the blessings of Grace.

Lesson #21 Series # 469 2Tim 1:14

- I. 11/11/18 End of WWI Freedom through Military Victory 11/11/1975
 - A. Eugene Bennet Fluke, Cmdr USNavy USS Barb, WWII, East Coast China, 12/19/1944-2/15/1945
 - B. William A Shomo (Believer), Maj USArmy, Pilot, Apari Airdromes, 70 Aircraft Destroyed.
 - C. Carl V Sheridan, PFC, K Company, 2nd Battalion, 47th Infantry, 9th Infantry Division, 26 Nov 1944, Friezenburg Castle, Veisveiler, Germany.
 - D. The United States of America has never lost a war when politicians stay out of the war.
 1. CIA destroyed Military Intelligence and were opposed to Sect Forrestal USNavy, McArthy warned about the CIA.
- II. Review the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
 - A. Principles:
 1. Before the fall man had a relationship with God based on creation having been created by God.
 2. He had 3 categories of Trees and told to use them:
 - i. Category I Trees for enjoyment for the soul.
 - ii. Category II Trees for Food with body stimulation and sustenance.
 - iii. Category III A single TREE OF LIVES which was designed to give man immediately after creation and as an ongoing process CAPACITY for the life and things God had given him.
 - a. Man was created as an adult and the only way he could have capacity for what God had given him was to have capacity for LIVES and he lived day by day.

- b. This is not Eternal Life and man ate of this tree and was Positive toward this tree and this gave him capacity to appreciate who and what God was along with the Bible Doctrine taught in the garden each day.
 - iv. Category IV a single tree forbidden to man which was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - a. When you have a relationship with God you don't need Human Works or Efforts or deeds and you do not need EVIL.
 - b. Evil is what you think and works is how you put the thinking into operation.
 - c. IL: The idiocy of the Laws passed by congress in the national government and state and local government which are totally idiotic and ludicrous
 - d. These laws are bleeding heart liberal do good efforts and represent everything evil and all that curtails freedom and antagonistic to our constitution.
 - e. This originates totally from EVIL and the congress generally since the time of this lesson and MUCH MORE SO TODAY saturated with individuals who can only think in terms of EVIL.
 - f. Reducing the Military to fund welfare and programs for illegals, Supporting labor unions, government control of industry, manipulation of the economy, ETC ETC.
 - g. Good is part of evil and both are forbidden since you don't have to know anything about EVIL the policy of Satan nor doing good, the result of Evil, to have a relationship with God.
 - h. Both Good and Evil reject and are antagonistic to grace and represent the genius of Satan the creator of both evil and Human Good.
 - i. The less you know of Evil and Human Good the better off you are as far as God is concerned.
- 3. The tree was provided for man when he was Ruler of the World and he only had this Status Quo until he sinned.
 - i. If man was to rule the world under God he had to have Capacity to appreciate God, for life, love, happiness, and perfect environment and these cannot be worked up for yourself but given by God in grace and the Tree of LIVES was so designed.
- 4. Therefore the tree of lives is associated with perfect environment and life in the garden and perpetuation of the capacity of that life under Positive Volition toward the original GRACE provision of God. **Gen 2:9, 3:22**
 - i. All the time man was in the garden he had a relationship with God and was ruler of the world in perfect environment.
 - ii. He had a tree toward which he MUST constantly exercise Positive Volition because since man was not born, did not start as an infant and imbecile and then became smart (neither Ishah) and since this was their origin created adults they had to start as adults with capacity to appreciate God, for live, happiness, and perfect environment provided by God.
 - iii. It is demonstrated by the GOG revolution at the end of the Millennium that people can react to perfect environment and do and the unbelievers in the Millennium react to the perfect environment and revolt against it because in the 1000 years of perfect environment they did not have capacity to appreciate God nor for life, love and happiness under perfect environment nor did they have capacity to appreciate the perfection of the environment as provided by God.
 - iv. The unbeliever never does because he is spiritually dead and DUH!!! Spiritual Death is the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, KNOWING Good and Evil.
 - v. Having in the soul Knowledge of Good and Evil you do not know God nor appreciate God and are dead to God.

- vi. After the fall people are no longer created by God directly but BORN as infants and imbeciles with an Old Sin Nature and under Spiritual Death and therefore born as do good liberals with the knowledge of Good and Evil.
- vii. This is the plan and project of Satan.
- 5. The purpose in creation of man could not be perpetuated after the fall of man through the tree of lives.
- 6. The purpose of creation is perpetuated after the fall by cutting man off from the tree of lives causing man to focus attention on the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil goes on into history for both believer and unbeliever with the believer being in reversionism under the influence of EVIL.
- 7. The new tree of life after the fall is the cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and no one appreciates anything which God provides until he eats from the new tree of life through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - i. This is the equivalent to appreciating God.
 - ii. WE are born physically alive but spiritually dead because our original parents, BOTH of them, ate of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil therefore we are born under Spiritual Death.
 - iii. Being born under Spiritual Death we have no ability to appreciate God but being born under Good and Evil we can appreciate good and this is why the unbeliever is such a great Do Good Liberal Person.
 - iv. You can also appreciate Evil which is the satanic policy for this world but you can NOT appreciate God in Spiritual Death.
 - v. You come first to appreciate God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - vi. The cross is now a Tree of Life but it is a Tree of Eternal Life not lives for capacity only.
 - vii. This is why we must be “Born Again” and then we are in a place where we have the potential to appreciate God and this is where Bible Doctrine comes into the picture.
 - viii. The Tree of Lives in the garden could not provide Redemption, Reconciliation nor Propitiation but only could provide capacity to appreciate God and what God had provided only for the person with a relationship with God.
 - ix. What the Tree of Lives did in the garden Bible Doctrine does today for the believer therefore the reason and logic for the necessity to be consistent and function DAILY under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
- 8. The salvation work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross is the new tree of life which perpetuates the Angelic Conflict after the fall of man in the garden.
- B. Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil Reviewed basically with a very few additions.
 - 1. There are 2 periods of human history where man rules the world under the grace policy of God.
 - i. Adam in the garden for an unknown period of time.
 - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the millennium for 1000 years.
 - 2. Both of these periods are characterized by perfect environment and both end with man in revolt against the perfect policy of Grace.
 - 3. We do not know how long man was in the garden maybe 1000 years and had perfect environment with
 - i. Perfect soul stimulation in the Category I Trees, bible Class every evening with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ teaching him doctrine.
 - ii. Perfect Body Stimulation in the Category II Trees with food and SEX with Ishah every day.
 - iii. Perfect environment and nothing to do except enjoy these things without working and the Tree of Lives gave him capacity to enjoy them.

- iv. No Human Good and No working and capacity from the Tree of Lives.
 - 4. In the end, Led by the woman he revolted,
 - 5. He was ruler and the Woman revolted against man, God, and doctrine and then the woman led the man to the fall.
 - 6. In the millennium Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ returns and establishes 1000 years of perfect environment with him ruling the world.
 - 7. At the end of that time Satan is released for a short time and ALL unbelievers revolt under the GOG revolution against perfect environment.
 - 8. Spiritual death has no appreciation for what God has provided neither in the garden in Man's Innocence (lack of the Knowledge of Good and Evil) nor in the millennium.
 - 9. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul insulates the believer against the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and provides the blessings of Grace.
- C. In the original temptation of the woman Satan used the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil by relating it to the pride or arrogance of the woman.
- 1. She was the weaker of the 2 mentally in the garden, **Gen 3:1-6**
 - i. She was under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and resisted Bible Doctrine taught by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. Apparently she began to lay off of the tree of lives and Satan therefore found her vulnerable to the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - iii. The woman thought she was smarter than the man which she was not and she also thought she was smarter than Satan and therefore LEADS the Losers.
 - iv. One thing men do not know about women is that women are tougher in their souls than men and women are LESS sensitive in their souls than men.
 - v. Men carry in the soul a hypersensitivity which is part of their makeup and women can forgive men for unfaithfulness but rarely does this occur vice versa.
 - vi. Physically women are not stronger than men today with some exceptions.
 - vii. The woman has a great strength in the soul and man is far weaker than the woman.
 - viii. The man is weak being hypersensitive but the woman is prone to PRIDE which is her weakness of soul.
 - 2. Satan in approaching the woman wanted to keep the issue on EVIL.
 - i. Satan understood the principle that it is not the man it is the message.
 - ii. If Satan had appeared to the woman in all his beauty the woman would have swooned and done whatever he wanted.
 - iii. Satan is not an ugly red horned green eyed forked tail monster but the most beautiful creature ever created by God, Lucifer son of the morning.
 - iv. The 2nd most beautiful being is the Woman.
 - v. The 3rd well is probably all other angels and then maybe the Male human.
 - 3. Satan follows certain rules in the Angelic Conflict
 - i. Man had a relationship with God through creation.
 - ii. If you are going to get someone away from God, you must emphasize the message and his message was Good and Evil
 - iii. How was he to get Good and Evil in front of the woman without having her get eyes or focus on Satan himself?
 - iv. This was Easy and he simply picked her pet the Serpent the most beautiful creature in the animal kingdom and the woman enjoyed having him around.
 - v. Satan indwelt the serpent and in this way he could get a message to the woman and get her eyes on the message not the man.
 - vi. Satan could not lead her astray by his sheer beauty as this would cancel the Angelic Conflict and he knows it.
 - vii. He knows he must get her soul not her body which he could have gotten in about 1 second, **Gen 6** where many fallen angels got many feminine bodies and we had a whole crop of super heroes in the world.

- viii. If he seduces her it is a no contest deal but he must win her soul and therefore must follow the principle that it is not the communicator it is what is communicated.
4. One tree is forbidden in the garden and only 1 tree, the policy and plan of Satan, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - i. The others are for enjoyment, food and appreciation of God and his provision.
 - ii. Satan starts with a concept that God is unfair, unkind, and trying to put you down by not letting you have ALL the trees.
 - iii. God is therefore maligned by Satan telling her God is being UNFAIR to her and the woman with a tough soul cannot stand someone deceiving or taking advantage of her.
 - iv. The soul of a woman is so tough that it cracks up when someone is deceiving or taking advantage of her and they think they can detect lies where deceit does not exist.
 - v. They see lies in everything and if you happen to be being truthful you have a little time before you are executed to prove it...
 5. The woman now feels superior and will now straighten out the serpent just like Carey Nation who tried to get everyone to stop drinking alcohol, or Bloomer which made things worse totally to today by getting women to VOTE.
 - i. A woman always feels good if she is straightening you out and it is magnificent to see having forgotten about sex and all the things which happen between a man and woman.
 - ii. The woman immediately now gets on to a pride function in now going to straighten out Satan in the serpent.
 - iii. Satan wants her to be functioning under pride or arrogance and all humans are deceiveable under arrogance or pride.
 - a. This is another good reason to avoid it aside from the other implications spiritually
 - b. You can be deceived so very quickly and this is the fastest way to have someone make a fool of you simply by your staying in arrogance.
 - c. God made a fool out of Satan on this same principle.
 6. The woman should have said Jehovah Elohim who was the communicator of Bible Doctrine to them in the garden.
 - i. This shows she is already in reversionistic creation.
 - ii. She adds to the prohibition of God by saying that God said you should not eat nor touch the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and he did not say anything about touching the tree.
 - iii. The woman is tough in her soul because she is not spiritual in her soul.
 - iv. When she had that lecture in bible class about the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and is uselessness in relationship with God but only to be oriented to grace and he said simply "DO not eat of this tree".
 - v. Because she could not think in terms of spiritual things she thought that death lay in the property of the tree.
 - vi. She though the property of the tree was such that it was poisoned and if you touched or ate from the fruit you will die either way.
 - vii. She added to Bible Doctrine in her arrogance.
 - viii. Death did not lay in eating from the tree but in the act of disobedience not in the physical properties of the tree or its fruit.
 - ix. The act of disobedience was carried out through eating because eating since the beginning of Human History has been nonmeritorious with good, bad, moral, immoral, amoral, religious, irreligious, non religious, communists, capitalist, military, anti military, ALL HUMANS EAT without merit on their part at all.

- x. God in his great sense of humor gave us a system of eating for sustaining our bodies which is totally nonmeritorious with us not earning nor deserving this in any way.
 - xi. Eating is nonmeritorious function but hooked up with the plan and policy of Satan this becomes a violation of the Plan of God and Will of God and this act of disobedience was the first sin in the Human Race.
 - xii. Negative Volition occurred in this test of the Angelic Conflict functions.
7. There is nothing more beautiful than a woman who is WRONG straightening you out.
8. Satan now says emphatically YOU SHALL NOT DIE which is a direct contradiction of what God said.
- i. God said the penalty of disobedience ie Sin is Death indicating Spiritual Death
 - ii. Satan said there is no death for disobedience.
 - iii. The issue now is WHO IS THE WOMAN GOING TO BELIEVE? Satan, or God.
 - iv. The woman was already under Negative Volition to God and resisting Bible Doctrine and should not have been talking to the serpent ie Satan but should have cleared this with her husband Adam.
 - v. She is however already breaking out from under the rule of Adam the ruler of the world.
 - vi. She is going to believe what Satan says because she is already functioning under Arrogance.
 - vii. Arrogance or Pride has a counter part and a person can be arrogant and show it as long as he is not under pressure but UNDER PRESSURE such as in combat then the arrogance submerges and up comes cowardice.
 - viii. This is what happened to the woman.
 - ix. Satan encouraged her to be arrogant and then challenged her arrogance and this resulted in Jealousy coming up and unfaithfulness to her Right Man.
9. Satan now has to keep fanning the fires of arrogance since a woman is actually 2 people.
- i. One is herself
 - ii. One is under the influence of arrogance
 - iii. These 2 are totally different people.
 - iv. Under arrogance a woman can be totally deceived and is vulnerable to anyone who can appeal to her pride.
 - v. Satan now says that God does not want you to eat of that Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil because he does not want you to be as smart as he is.
 - vi. This appealed to the woman who in her mind said, "How dare him, I am going to be smarter than God and I WILL eat from that tree".
 - vii. All Satan had to do is get the woman leaning in the right direction and if she has enough arrogance she will go ahead with it.
 - viii. In innocence man needed to know Bible Doctrine to orient to grace but did not need good and evil which was to orient to the plan and policy of Satan.
10. Now the woman has concentrated on the message of Satan and concentrates on the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and she accepted the message of Satan over the prohibition of God.
- i. In her concentration she saw that the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was beautiful to the eyes and good for food and was desirable for making her smart.
 - ii. The woman by far is the most beautiful creature in the Human Race far more beautiful than the male and even an unattractive woman is far more beautiful than even a handsome male.
 - iii. This woman is exceedingly beautiful and totally attractive to the man and she knows it but she wants MORE and wants to be smarter than the man.
 - iv. This is the total problem for the woman.
 - v. She has already assumed that she is smarter than Adam but not smarter than God.

11. So then the woman at the tree took from the fruit and Ate and the man, now following her to the tree when he should have been leading, was given the fruit by the woman and he also ate it.
- D. Therefore 3 principles must be perceived in order to understand the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil the policy and plan of Satan.
1. Doctrine of pride
 2. Doctrine of Evil
 3. Doctrine of Human Good.
- E. Doctrine of Human Good:
1. Human Good is dead to the Plan of God and policy of God. **Gen 2:17, Heb 6:1**
 - i. Believers must change their minds about dead works which is the plan of Satan.
 - ii. Spiritual Death includes all the evil that the unbeliever THINKS and all the Human Good which the unbeliever DOES and all the EVIL and Human Good the reversionist accomplishes.
 2. Human Good is linked with Arrogance to produce Boasting **Eph 2:9, Rom 4:2**
 - i. Human Good always stimulates Arrogance.
 3. Human Good is never acceptable to God **Is 64:6**
 - i. Spiritual Death makes all us like the unclean and all our Human Good deeds are like menstrual rags and all of us wither like a leaf and reversionism is like a wind carrying the believer away.
 - ii. This is why the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was forbidden.
 4. Distinction must be made between Satanic policy of Human Good and Morality Human Good. **Rom 13:1-7**
 - i. Divine Good == Production of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Bible Doctrine
 - a. There was no need for production of Divine Good in the garden in innocence until man fell.
 - ii. Human Good == The principle function of Satan's Policy
 - iii. Moral Good == Laws of Divine Establishment Good
 - a. Government is establishment and there is no authority except those established by God.
 - b. Human government is for protection of human freedom and property
 - c. Resisting authority is in opposition to the policy of God and will receive Divine Discipline.
 - d. Rulers are not a cause to fear to those who function under the Laws of Divine Establishment good:
 - i) Military service
 - ii) Free enterprise laws
 - iii) All things designed for freedom, privacy and property protection.
 - e. Function under the Laws of Divine Establishment will bring you NO FEAR.
 - f. Doing Evil should bring fear because Laws of Divine Establishment use capital punishment to keep society functioning properly.
 - g. The people who avoid military service as part of the Laws of Divine Establishment Good and they are liars and for the sake of their clear conscience every man should serve in the military and pay taxes etc.
 - h. Rendering to all what is due them, Paying taxes, following customs, Serving in the military, giving respect, giving honor is all part of Laws of Divine Establishment GOOD.
 5. Human Good will not save mankind **Eph 2:8-9, Tit 3:5, 2Tim 1:9**
 6. The judgment of Human Good in 3 ways:
 - i. Not at the cross where Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was judged for all SIN but Human Good and Evil were both rejected.
 - a. God always rejects the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and they were rejected at the cross.

- b. The Area of strength in the Old Sin Nature produces Good and Evil and both were rejected by God.
- c. These were rejected at the cross because the Angelic Conflict must continue to the end of Human History and Good and Evil are the policy and plan of Satan as ruler of the world UNTIL the millennium and then end of Human History when his sentence will be carried out and Good and Evil must continue as a challenge to everyone who receives Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior.
- d. Judgment of the Human Good of the believer will occur after the rapture at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. **Rom 5:10, 1Cor 3:11-16, 2Cor 5:10**
- e. Judgment of the unbelievers Human Good occurs at the Great White Throne Judgment **Rev 20:12-15**

Lesson #22 Series # 469 2Tim 1:14

- I. The importance of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - A. We must learn that the most important thing in life is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 1. We can see this from the NEWS of what is occurring in the world today.
 - B. The one nice thing about REVERSION RECOVERY is that as you make recovery you can shoot straight back to Status Quo Super Grace very rapidly.
 - 1. Timothy will be a leader to the next generation and will receive his Super Grace blessings in all 5 categories.
 - 2. Reaching Status Quo of Super Grace is to our benefit in every conceivable way spiritually, temporally, in association with others and to our nation and even to exit this life under dying grace.
 - 3. The Pastor Teacher must be constantly studying in order to reach and continue in Status Quo Super Grace in order to LEAD his congregation there.
 - C. Under the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception there is recovery from reversionism and this directs one straight toward the objective in the Spiritual Life of reaching Super Grace Status Quo.
 - 1. WE must come at some point to realize that there is nothing more important than Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 2. This is where you come to know and appreciate who and what God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit are and were we develop capacity for life and impact as a member of the Royal Family of God comes into focus.
 - D. For the Church Age believer there never has been nor will be a time when God the Holy Spirit does not indwell the body of the believer.
 - 1. This includes all believers, the good, the bad, and the ugly.
 - E. Principle:
 - 1. The 2nd deposit in this context is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - i. The first deposit is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 2. This is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which results in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. James 4:6
 - 3. Once there in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the command to guard refers to maintaining the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace we are to HOLD the high ground of Spiritual Maturity. **Phil 3:12-21**
 - 4. This anticipates the rest of this chapter were the reversionist is ashamed of the 2nd deposit.
 - i. The reversionist is always ashamed of Bible Doctrine and any thought based on Bible Doctrine or any Divine Viewpoint he is actually ashamed of.
 - ii. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is never ashamed of Bible Doctrine or Divine Viewpoint and is not afraid to pray over food in public.

- iii. We must never be concerned more about what people think of us than what the Lord thinks of us.
- 5. Being ashamed of the 2nd deposit of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in being ashamed of the first deposit of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. If you are ashamed of the written word then you are ashamed of the living word.
- 6. First the believer becomes ashamed of Bible Doctrine which he rejects then becomes ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. Reverse Process Reversionism actually becomes the principle of repudiating Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in some way.
- 7. It is fitting that this chapter should end with a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace who is not ashamed of the 2nd deposit of Bible Doctrine and therefore became a fragrant memory to Paul under the concept of Alde Lang Zine.
 - i. We must consider what kind of memory we leave with people one of refreshment or just a pain in the neck which is now gone.
 - ii. We must eventually ask ourselves if anyone has ever been refreshed by our Life and is our life refreshing or spoiled and stale.

II. Reversionists the ones who are ashamed and has no refreshment.

- A. They are total failures and have no Super Grace blessings the therefore no blessings for anyone in association with them.
 - 1. Our best friends in life will be those whom we associate with when we reach the point of being a blessing by association for them.
 - 2. Add to this all encompassing capacity for Life and the believers we meet who are under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine will be our best friends in life.
- B. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul through the daily consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit must be emphasized
 - 1. Reversionism comes through rejection of this Bible Doctrine and getting priorities confused and forgetting our Scale of Values.
 - 2. It is nice when people catch up to you spiritually and can agree with you on something.
- C. Timothy here has one of the largest churches in the roman empire and also has more reversionists than anywhere else.
 - 1. Reversionism is a form of revolution which we can call spiritual revolution and all revolution is BAD.
 - 2. Reversionism has 8 stages and some of these believers are in each stage but all have repudiated and revolted against Paul and Bible Doctrine.
 - 3. Stage 1 == Reaction when the believer is bitter or full of self putty being vindictive and implacable with regard to Paul.
 - 4. Stage 2 == Frantic Search for happiness and they forgot all about Paul.
 - 5. Stage 3 == Operation Boomerang where they bounce back and are 2x more miserable than before and their reaction of Stage 1 is vastly intensified.
 - 6. Stage 4 == Emotional Revolt of the Soul where they are telling everyone how much better they are than Paul and being ashamed of Paul they must PROVE how much better they are than he and thus they run Paul down as a person.
 - 7. Stage 5 == Locked in Negative Volition is now them begin to criticize the message of Paul and this puts them in very serious trouble and leads to the BEGINNING of the influence of evil where the vacuum of the soul begins to open for evil and where teaching demons begin to function to give the person the message of Evil and bring him under the influence of it.
 - 8. Stage 6 == Blackout of the Soul where being ashamed of Paul, Timothy, Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ occurs.
 - 9. Stage 7 == Hardness of the Right Lobe with callouses on the soul prevent doctrine from being applied.

10. Stage 8 == Reverse Process Reversionism where anyone going in the proper direction in the Spiritual Life are repudiated.
- D. The believers in Ephesus repudiated Paul and then Timothy and this was because they repudiated Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Bible Doctrine.
1. They revolted against Bible Doctrine and this repudiation of Paul and Timothy is a side issue.
 2. This can and does occur when you have friends who are going along together and one moves ahead to Spiritual Maturity and the other does not and they become ships which pass in the night and then you cannot ever go back to that friend and if you do you will immediately lose ground in the advance in the Spiritual Life and enter reversionism.
 3. There are some people in this life who are nice to know but we must forget that they ever lived.
 4. Somewhere in the period of life we will in our soul have to get tough about friendship instead of sentimental and stupid.
 5. At the time of Paul writing this passage there was a maximum number of reversionists living in the roman province of Asia, called "Luke warm believers".
- E. Paul never talked much about individuals and spoke mostly about systems and named them and explained them but occasionally he gets down to naming names of individuals.
1. When he does so it is under his authority as an apostle and communicator and only to protect a congregation.
 2. Some of these he names are pastors who are leading believers astray.
 3. The names here have no meaning since their mothers named them not doctrine.
 4. These 2 men are in reversionism and they are not straight in their doctrine and many people tied in with them are not advancing since they are not teaching Bible Doctrine.
 5. Phygelus is one of these and is sweet and nice and full of Human Good and Evil principles.
 6. He is mentioned because people are easily led astray from Bible Doctrine by pleasant personalities.
 7. Hermogenes is a GREAT orator and the Greek culture looks highly upon those who are great speakers.
 8. In his eloquence he was also leading many astray and it is very stimulating for some people to listen to an eloquent person speak and not understand a single thing they say.
- F. When a man has the gift of Pastor Teacher his eloquence or pleasing personality are not an issue.
1. God does not use the flashy personalities nor the eloquence of great speakers but with the gift of Pastor Teacher the man must simply plug along and God will have a ministry for him and all he has to do is have the Bible Doctrine to communicate.
 2. Being an eloquent speaker can very frequently detract from what he says but when a pastor stumbles through a message the people most often say, "What is he trying to say" and then concentrate and listen to him.
 3. Personality and Eloquent Speech is NOT needed for the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher to function properly.

III. Super Grace believer v16-18

- A. The 2nd deposit coming into focus the ministry of refreshment coming into focus.
- B. Illustration:
 1. We were born with Positive Volition and Negative Volition in our soul.
 2. All of us have learned as we understood the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil the principle here.
 3. When you are under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine you become a reversionist and as one this puts you under the influence of and policy and plan of Satan.
 4. The policy and thinking of Satan is EVIL his function is GOOD therefore the prohibition of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil Satan's great genius.
 5. We in effect have a situation like the garden today without the trimmings whereby people who are under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine are under the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil

6. These people are FULL of Human Good, church programs, and Evil the concepts behind church programs to build up the local church membership.
 7. This is all the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 8. The Tree of Lives which is god's genius figuring out how to give us capacity for life and this is the believer moving consistent toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace from daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 9. We are all eating from one tree or the other by daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception or rejection of Bible Doctrine.
 10. We have been warned away from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil since creation
 11. Adam and Ishah were created as adults and had relationship with God based on creation and there was no regeneration nor salvation there being no need for it.
 12. They had a choice in the garden with the 2 trees in the middle of the garden.
 13. The Tree of Lives which was their capacity to appreciate all that God provided for them in innocence.
 14. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil which was the plan and policy of Satan
 15. In the Angelic Conflict there must always be a choice for man and God WARNED man to NOT eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil the plan and policy of Satan, and he told them that when they ate from this tree they would be DEAD to God.
 16. Good and Evil are not needed in a relationship with God and they already had a creation relationship with God and were told to stay away from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and this is EXACTLY what they did.....for a while.
 17. The man constantly ate of the tree of lives and this gave him capacity for what God had provided, the woman may have begun to neglect the tree of lives and lost capacity for the garden, man, Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 18. By rejecting the man she rejected the Bible Doctrine and this resulted in her losing even more capacity for life.
 19. When they ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil they rejected the Bible Doctrine and accepted the plan and policy of Satan they became spiritually dead
 20. Once YOU know Satan's Human Good and evil which is policy to emulate GRACE you are spiritually dead and have no relationship with God.
 21. Then they left the garden had children but the children were BORN under Spiritual Death and Satan's plan and policy since he was ruler.
 22. Satan's first demand on the man and woman was to get dressed and not be naked this was an act of Satanic Good or Human Good and was not good at all.
 23. The evil goes together with Human Good and Evil is the thinking and policy of Satan the Good is the function of his plan.
 24. We are born under Spiritual Death and sometimes before we ever sin we produce good or think some viewpoint of Satan or Evil therefore we MUST be BORN AGAIN being born physically alive and spiritually dead.
 25. The man and woman made a choice for Spiritual Death but we are born under Spiritual Death.
 26. The only way to enter a relationship with God is NOT through creation for us but through regeneration by being BORN AGAIN when God the Holy Spirit regenerates us by creating for us a Human Spirit.
- C. All we must do is remember the garden as a believer, and every day we get a choice to eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil he plan and policy of Satan as ruler of this world or we can EAT from the Tree of Lives which is categories of Bible Doctrine absorbed into our soul.
1. We have the same choice as man and the woman had in the garden.

2Tim 1:14

v14: Guard that beneficial deposit of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, through God the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

2Tim 1:15

v15: You know or are aware of this fact, that all those believers, who are in the Roman Province of Asia, capital in Ephesus (Rev 2+3), have revolted, repudiated, turned away from me, through reversionism, and namely Phy'gelus and Hermog'enes.

Lesson #23 Series # 469 2Tim 1:16

I. Principles:

- A. Those who are associated with Paul or any Super Grace believer SHARE their great blessings.
 - 1. This is the most altruistic motive for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace for those not interested in temporal blessings for themselves.
 - 2. This applies to any who are motivated to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and are Ascetic types.
- B. It is the WISH of Paul that God the Father give mercy and blessing to Onesiphorous and it is almost a foregone conclusion that HE WILL since he is in association with Paul an Ultra Super Grace believer.
 - 1. God blesses always those related to a Super Grace believer by association blessing.
 - 2. Here Paul is showing us that he is not dictating to God since this is blaspheme but also that there are certain desires that a believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace as a leader can have and express these with an assurance that they will occur based on the promises of God for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 3. This is true here as long as they don't intrude on the privacy or freedom of pastor Timothy.
- C. During his lifetime Onesiphorous was a great refreshment to both Paul and Timothy and Paul is indicating that because of his association with Paul now his FAMILY will be blessed from God.
 - 1. His relatives will continue to be blessed after his death.
 - 2. Any time a person dies under Dying Grace he leaves behind a **GRACE OBLIGATION** on the part of the Lord to continue to bless the members of his family who are still alive in the world of Satan.
 - i. This is the best life insurance ever.
 - ii. Insurance is often the best way for a person to provide economic security for those in his family after his death.
 - 3. This blessing transcends the departure of the Super Grace believer from this life under dying grace and his knowing he is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and dying under dying grace and a part of that is knowing that God will take care of his family and loved ones after he is gone.
- D. Onesiphorous as a believer who had reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is in contrast to Pygelus and Hermogenes who were in reversionism.
 - 1. As a result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul He had maximum capacity for love in all categories and as a result of his Category III love for Paul this was the cause of his death.
 - 2. He died because of this capacity for love and because he befriended Paul in Rome.
 - 3. Paul here is making an application of Bible Doctrine knowing that the family of Onesiphorous is going to receive great blessing from God.

II. Blessing:

- A. Not only does God provide blessing for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in his 5 categories of blessing but also provides in this mechanism an overflow of blessing to those associated with him.
 - 1. IN TIME and AFTER THE DEATH of the mature believer.
 - 2. ANYONE associated with a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace receives blessing by association while this believer is alive and after he is dead.
 - 3. This can be ANYONE in association with him.
- B. The family of Onesiphorous still lives in Ephesus and very much under divine blessing and whether they reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace they will be constantly taken care of by God.
- C. Paul recognizes their bereavement and anticipates their future blessings because of their close association with such a great believer as he was.

- D. Every believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is GREAT and spiritual greatness is numbered in any generation by the exact number of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in that generation.
- E. Not only does the believer in Super Grace carry his own generation in Human History but both receives blessing from God and through association provides blessing from God to those in his intimate periphery.
- F. Review the 5 categories of Blessing for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 1. All believers have a package of Super Grace blessing designed for them in Eternity Past and whether they receive it or not depends on their attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. Our Super Grace blessings were designed exclusively for us in Eternity Past and it is simply a matter of consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and WE WILL RECEIVE them.
 - 3. Spiritual Blessings:
 - i. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the ultimate objective
 - ii. Receiving Sharing the Happiness of God
 - iii. Capacity for LIFE in every category
 - iv. Capacity for blessing
 - v. Capacity for Happiness
 - vi. Ability to face every adversity and pressure of LIFE without disintegration.
 - 4. Temporal Blessings:
 - i. God is not stingy here and when they are from God they are very meaningful and when from Satan they are meaningless.
 - a. If they are the result of a combination of Satanic “blessing” and your own scheming they are meaningless.
 - ii. Wealth
 - iii. Success in any endeavor
 - iv. Promotion
 - v. Prosperity
 - a. Social
 - b. Sexual
 - c. Professional
 - d. Technical
 - e. Mental
 - f. Cultural
 - g. Establishment
 - i) Freedom
 - ii) Privacy
 - iii) Protection from Crime
 - iv) Blessing in Combat
 - h. In the midst of Depression and Economic disaster
 - vi. Leadership Dynamics
 - 5. Association Blessings
 - i. When you have those whom you love in the periphery of your life it is wonderful to know that God will bless them because they are in association with you.
 - a. This is the ministry of Refreshment
 - b. It is nice to KNOW that we can be a blessing to someone else despite our impossible personality, devious and tricky way of Playing Games with others.**
 - ii. Family
 - iii. Friends
 - iv. Loved ones
 - v. Business Associates

- a. Many times this occurs when there is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace somewhere in the business.
 - vi. Any organization which the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is associated with at any level.
 - a. It just takes ONE (1) believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and he is GREATER than a whole ARMY.
 - vii. Most Super Grace believers in the world exist in the United States of America in 1975 and most likely today as well.
 - a. This is where the United States of America gets its blessing in spite of stupid politicians and the stupid laws they pass.
 - b. It is not by the wisdom of the people in the government and not by any statesmanship but by the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - viii. Those in the geographical area where the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace exist are also blessed.
- 6. Historical Impact Blessings
 - i. This is the Super Grace believer as the salt of the earth and spiritual atlas carrying his own generation in history. **2Tim 1:5**
 - ii. This was demonstrated in the spiritual heritage blessing seen in the family of Timothy.
- 7. Dying Blessing
 - i. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has greater blessing in dying than he had in living.
 - ii. He dies with the assurance that those who remain alive after his death will continue to benefit from his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - iii. If you remain a believer in Super Grace in time and go out of this life under dying grace the next step is surpassing grace for eternity above and beyond what the Peons in heaven will have.
 - a. It is not really BAD to be a Peon in heaven since they will have a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, Human Good and the Lake of Fire.
 - b. There will however be vast differences among believers in heaven and in fact there are vast differences even now in time.
 - c. We are not, never have been and never will be EQUAL.
 - d. We are ALL however FREE.
 - e. Some people will become believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and as such will be so far above other believers it is not expressible.
 - f. Some people will become believers but will go into reversionism and receive NOTHING in surpassing grace except their Resurrection Body
 - g. Some people will become mediocre believers and they will fill the in between in heaven.
 - h. There are 3 kinds of believers
 - i) + going forward to or in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
 - ii) 0 going no where.
 - iii) - in reversionism.
 - iv. WE are all equal as believers in only one sense, we are all in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and part of the Royal Family of God but in any family the children are never EQUAL.
 - a. There are many genius' in history who never amount to anything but there have been 2 genius' in history who were diversified in their genius and were the 2 greatest man in Human History as unbelievers.

- i) Napoleon Bonaparte
 - ii) Gaius Julius Caesar
 - b. They both were able to Bring their genius to REALITY and superimpose their genius on REALITY and by so doing changed history.
 - c. Their genius was associated with reality.
 - d. Napoleon was a genius and in every area of his genius he superimposed it on reality and this is how history is made or changed.
 - e. Most genius' are UNREAL and most are cookoo and disassociated with reality but in their field are fantastic.
 - f. Frederick the Great was a military Genius and a ruling genius but he stayed within the confines of the CUSTOMS of his times.
 - g. There have been only 2 men of genius who have actually changed history and did so by superimposing their genius on contemporary history.
 - v. In addition Moses was the same with diversified Genius but almost escaped reality but the Burning Bush is what brought him back to reality.
 - a. Moses then moved into history for a 2nd time and changed history.
 - b. The first time for Moses he changed Egypt and made it a famous fantastic place but did not change history.
 - c. The 2nd time he changed history but had been on the verge of being divorced from reality but the Burning Bush brought him back to reality.
 - vi. Paul also changed history as did Abraham but NOT just for their generation.
 - a. All believers change history in their generation but Moses, Paul and probably Abraham changed history forever.
 - vii. There is no equality.
 - a. There is no equality among genius' and no equality among morons
 - b. THERE IS FREEDOM FOR EVERYONE BUT EVERYONE HAVING FREEDOM DOES NOT MEAN THEY ARE EQUAL.
 - i) Many of our laws in the United States of America are trying to bring about EQUALITY but this is impossible.
 - viii. No matter how you approach it dying blessing brings about a variation of status in eternity.
 - a. Some believers will have surpassing grace blessings and many will have nothing and some will be in between.
 - b. There is not exception were you can recover from reversionism WHEN you get to eternity.
 - ix. You are either saved or lost for eternity.
 - a. In the Lake of Fire with the genius Satan and his fallen angels for all eternity
 - b. In the presence of God under varying degrees of blessing
 - x. There are degrees of blessing in time and in eternity.
 - a. In time this depends of the believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 - b. In eternity this depends on the believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine in TIME.
 - c. EVERYTHING for the believer depends on Bible Doctrine and doctrine is the fuel for GRACE.
 - d. The Grace Plan of God runs on the fuel of Bible Doctrine.
- G. A person takes in Bible Doctrine often under agonizing conditions then there is for them refreshment.
1. Great people are human.
 2. Therefore as human beings they have certain human needs like anyone else.
 - i. Friends and here is one Onesiphorous who always was a great blessing for Paul.
 3. It is VERY unusual for anyone to be a blessing to a great person because most people are always competing with a great person.

4. Paul had several friends who climbed over him and told everyone they were greater than Paul
 - i. Alexander the Coppersmith.
 5. Many people associate with great people for only one reason because of jealousy, pettiness, competitiveness, implacability and they use the greatness of this person to try to make themselves greater.
 6. Often these are NAME DROPPERS and ones who express knowledge of a great person in order to promote themselves.
 7. It takes a GREAT person to be a friend of a GREATER person and NOT compete with them.
 8. It takes spiritual greatness to be friends with a truly great person and not pick at them and try to put them down under the aegis of their friendship.
 9. These take advantage of this supposed friendship and under the aegis of this friendship when they get around other people they put down the one who is truly great.
- H. We must live life in privacy as unto the Lord and tell him OOPS when we keep doing the same stupid things over and over again.
- I. Onesiphorous was so very great and in his Status Quo of Super Grace he could be in the company of the incredible Paul and not enter into competition with him.
1. Part of the ministry of refreshment is TRUE LOVE which is not ashamed in any category:
 - i. Category I – Not being ashamed of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - ii. Category II – Not being ashamed of your Right Man or Right Woman.
 - iii. Category III – Not being ashamed of your friends.
 2. When you have friends who do something wrong or have adverse publicity ARE YOU ASHAMED?
 - i. If so it simply indicates you do not have capacity for LOVE.
 3. You can be ashamed of self if you want to be but it is NOT ever necessary.
 - i. Being ashamed of self is never touted as being GOOD even when you are in rebound.
 - ii. You never have to be ashamed of your sin when you confess it.
 4. The less shame you have in your soul the better off you are and moving into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will squeeze this out of you.
 5. He had incredible capacity for Love and it was directed toward Paul while he was in prison.
 6. Paul is no longer a status symbol and is in disrepute with Rome and all those in his periphery as he stated in Asia have disassociated themselves with him but NOT Onesiphorous.
 7. He frequently visited Paul in the mamertine dungeon but was intimidated by the chief guard wanting to know who he was and why he was visiting Paul and eventually they decided he was a ‘christian’ who needed killing.

2Tim 1:16

v16: The Lord, God the Father, may give, is about to give the highest possible quality of mercy or grace in action, to the family of Onesiph'orus (he is now fact to face with the lord), because frequently he has refreshed or cheered me; and he was totally not ashamed of my chain or incarceration,

Lesson #24 Series # 469 2Tim 1:16

- I. Refreshment continued:
- A. Onosphorous not only was not ashamed of Paul being in prison but was so saturated with capacity for LOVE in this case Category III love for Paul that when he came to Rome he searched for him and found him in the Dungeon.
1. Most believers in Rome were frightened and feared for their lives and were not helping Paul in any way.

2. When Onosipherous went to the dungeon he had to proclaim who he was and why he was visiting Paul and the guards eventually decided that he was a christian who needed to be killed.
3. In the ancient world in the prisons they did not feed you and if you did not have friends you starved to death in prison.
4. Onosipherous was a true man and he searched for Paul until he found him despite the fact that he was putting his own life in danger and this is what eventually got him killed.

B. A True Man:

1. Manhood is not being a male and it is not how much muscle you have or how strong you are or how tough your vocabulary is.
2. Manliness is a characteristic of the soul and NOT a physiological characteristic.
3. To think like a man is to be a NOBLE creature, honorable and have the ability for true love.
4. Some males are still boys and cannot have a true friend and compete with everyone around them and are so arrogant and filled with pride and self importance that friendships are mostly sniping at one another to try to put down others and prove your superiority.
5. THIS IS PLAYING GAMES IN LIFE AND RESULTS IN A TRUE ROADBLOCK AS FAR AS YOUR ADVANCE IS CONCERN.
6. You cannot be a man until you have an honorable soul and moral courage which is the greatest aspect of manliness.
7. Manliness is loyalty and TRUE LOVE and many men don't even have the capacity for Cat III love and still run around the try to date a bunch of girls when they don't have the ability to be loyal and relaxed around other men.
8. This demonstrates that the male is not under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as yet.
9. No male has to be a wimp for his whole life but someone somewhere sometime should be able to have you as a friend.
10. Somewhere along the way we all must realize that we are simply making an ass out of self trying to be better than everyone else and that this is an impossible goal.
11. This will cause one to become mentally unstable and psychotic or neurotic OR revert to a baby and sulk all the time because no one recognized how great a person they are.
12. As a male you are as a member of the Royal Family of God and will never become a MAN until you become a GRACE oriented and functioning type.
13. Orientation to grace first and then moving in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

C. Femininity

1. The ladies must also recognize that being feminine is first an attitude of soul as well.
2. When these ladies recognize this it is a much nicer time to be around them.

D. Those who don't recognize these aspects of truth in life are suffering constantly GROWING pains into adulthood.

1. Never go backward but continue to advance as Bible Doctrine will bring you to maturity in every way and don't sulk and quit sucking your thumb and start growing up.
2. You don't make friends and get people to appreciate you by constantly competing.
3. There is a place for this type of competition but it is ONLY found in the devils world and this is in fact what is wrong with wimpy pastors who do not study and teach as they are supposed to.
4. Lack of manliness is ARROGANCE and there is no one in this life who you should be competing with EVER.
5. Every Pastor Teacher should do his own thing and simply study and teach and plug away and let the Lord advance him.
6. Every believer should simply do his own thing and study each and every day and move ahead constantly in the Spiritual Life and apply what he has learned in his study. (ff).

E. The greater the person in life the harder it is for him to have TRUE FRIENDS.

1. The greatest chance for any of us to have true friends is to be a NOTHING in life

- i. {Sure glad I made it and have SO MANY true friends}(ff)
 2. Everyone loves a ZERO and you cannot compete with a zero and cannot criticize a zero and if you want to have friends and be nice just be a ZERO.
 3. This emphasizes a principle since Paul was a truly great man and one of the few greatest who ever has lived in all of Human History.
 - i. Because he is one of the greatest men who ever lived it was very hard for him to have true friends.
 4. Caesar had very few true friends and yet he was one of the most magnanimous persons ever to life as an unbeliever and forgave enemies whom he should have executed.
 - i. He was so phenomenal a person that he did more for Rome in 5 years than any other group of people did in over 200 years.
 - ii. Caesar lived his life without true friends and died without a friend and was in fact shocked because he thought his bastard son Brutus loved him dearly and he was one who killed him.
 - iii. Brutus was a nothing and Caesar made something out of him for not only was Caesar his father but also his mentor and the DOPE Brutus under the teaching of Caesar advanced to be a famous DOPE.
 5. Napoleon did more to promote people who where nothing in history.
 - i. Napoleon's Marshals were from the dregs of society in part.
 - ii. Nae was son of a man who made Barrels.
 - iii. Was the son of a man who was a milliner in France.
 - iv. One was son of a Lawyer
 - v. They all came from humble circumstances and Napoleon pushed them all ahead but by the time of Waterloo Napoleon did not have a true friend.
 - vi. His wife Josephine was a nymphomaniac and having sex with a different person every time he was out of town.
 - vii. No one liked him but they all used him and wanted to compete against him.
 - viii. Bernadote was made a marshal by Napoleon despite being a jackass and he was one of the first to receive title of nobility from Napoleon and later on became KING of Sweden but absolutely hated Napoleon and the more Napoleon did for him the more he hated him and the greater his jealousy.
 6. Moses did not have any friends and the only friendship he ever had was in Category II with the Ethiopian woman who was his friend and lover.
 - i. There never was a greater leader than Moses and whose greatness and tenacity in greatness and honor than Moses.
 - ii. Everyone was competing with him constantly.
 - iii. Dathan and Abirim were always flattering him while they fomented conspiracy against him.
 - iv. His sister Miriam who kept house for him was jealous of him as well and not his true friend.
 7. Great people do not have true friends because the Human Race in all of its history has not yet grown up and the only chance to have true friends are among those who are under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine constantly.
- F. Here is a man in Onosipherous whose nobility of soul and manliness were so great and so outstanding that he could be a great friend of Paul without trying to compete with him and never trying to put him down.
1. This is a truly great man.
 2. Onosipherous had to do a lot of searching and had to make a lot of inquiries in order to find Paul and by so doing he came under suspicion of Nero's Government but lack of fear and capacity for live caused him to be persistent and he finally found Paul.
 3. Apparently Onosipherous brought Paul everything he needed and kept him alive bringing him news fellowship and everything he needed.

4. In the course of this display of Cat III love Onosipherous was seized and brought for a roman tribunal were he refused to renounce Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he was quickly executed.
 5. This was the beginning of the famous roman persecutions of Christians.
 6. Onosipherous did not return to Ephesus but died in the function of the ministry of refreshment.
- G. Refreshment is a part of Category III Love.
1. Category III is the NON touching Friendship category of LOVE.
 2. It is primarily the friendship of Man with man and Woman with Woman.
 3. It can be Man with Woman and Woman with Man IF and only IF either is NEVER aroused by the friendship and if this occurs the friendship is OVER and terminated.
 4. Therefore there can be a relationship of a man with a woman provided that neither party is every turned on by the other.
 5. Much of what is classified as Cat III love between man and woman is BULL.

II. Doctrine of Refreshment:

- A. While refreshment in the English language generally connotes food and beverage or a light meal it has a much greater connotation in the word of God.
1. It means to restore the strength of soul
 2. To revive the Divine Viewpoint function in the soul through personal fellowship and social life and interchange of Bible Doctrine.
 3. This is NOT the teaching of Bible Doctrine but the interchange of Bible Doctrine and Divine Viewpoint when it occurs.
 4. It is to supply what is necessary for spiritual blessing in time of adversity and disaster.
- B. The alleviation of Saul's psychosis is classified as the ministry of Refreshment.
1. The Refresher was David making his first great spiritual advance and in the court of Saul he was in Super Grace Status Quo.
 2. He was the refresher and the refreshment was accomplished through his ability in music.
 3. Saul was suffering some type of psychosis probably Manic / Depressive state or something like that. **1Sam 16:23-**
 4. David's playing on his harp of 10 strings would refresh Saul and he would become well and the TEACHING Demon would leave him.
 5. This teaching demon apparently aroused Saul so that he developed psychotic tendencies and music was the therapy.
 6. Music has great therapeutic value and often reaches the soul in a therapeutic manner and it did gave Saul temporary recovery from his psychotic condition and is described as "refreshment".
 7. This is soul recovery from adverse conditions whether reversionism, neurosis, psychopathic behavior or psychosis, some form of evil and some eating at the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - i. {Makes you THINK about such things called "music" as RAP and HARD ROCK and what they do to the soul of those who listen to them constantly} (ff).
- C. The doctrinal refreshment (tristitch)
1. The first line gives an illustration for the 2nd and 3rd lines

Prov 25:13

v13: Like the ice cold water of melted snow brought to the workers by the water boy, in the HOT time of harvest is a faithful messenger servant or the Pastor Teacher, to those who send for him, the congregation he refreshes the souls of his masters.

2. The Pastor Teacher is like the water boy who bring refreshing water on a hot day to the workers in his bringing the communication of Bible Doctrine as a refreshment to his congregation.
 3. Refreshment in the bible is always connected with the soul and it is in this case the bringing of Bible Doctrine to the congregation.
- D. The rejection of refreshment means national discipline **Is 28:8-14**

1. This is seen as a problem of too many drunks and not enough Super Grace believers.
2. The problem in the land of the Northern kingdom here is LACK of Bible Doctrine.
3. Bible Doctrine must be taught precept or Category by precept, Line or Exegetically upon line a little at a time for growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
4. Believers who go into reversionism are generally still taught Bible Doctrine or have it available to them but their Negative Volition develops further and further putting them deeper into reversionism and bring them collectively to the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline.
5. This is what occurred in Israel in time of Isaiah and at 70 AD **Acts 3:19**
6. Carnality is SIN and can be recovered instantly by rebound.
7. Reversionism is EVIL an ingrained thinking process in the soul and it TAKES A VERY LONG TIME WITH INTENSIVE STUDY TO RECOVERY OFTEN MANY YEARS.
8. You must have a change of attitude for both rebound and reversionism and with rebound because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for ALL sin we can name our sin and be instantly forgiven it having already been judged.
9. Good and Evil the policy and actions of Satan as ruler of this world MUST continue in Human History to the end of Human History and when EVIL saturates the soul of the believer it takes a great deal of time under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception to remove the EVIL and replace is with Bible Doctrine.
10. Carnality has Sin involvement, however Reversionism has Evil and Human Good involvement and you cannot make a simple declaration and recover from reversionism as you can with SIN.
11. In reversionism you must change your mind about it consistently daily in order to recover from it.

E. Response to Bible Doctrine is called refreshment **Rom 15:32, 2Cor 7:13**

1. A bible conference in Rome is a means of refreshment for Paul and when any Pastor Teacher or individual gets to be with other believers who are under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine this exchange of doctrinal viewpoint is very refreshing to them.
2. This is also Titus and the Corinthians.

F. Super Grace believers all have a ministry of refreshment and is part of the package of Super Grace blessings, **1Cor 16:17-18, Philemon 7, 20, 2Tim 1:16**

III. The Desire of Paul with regard to Onospherous which became reality.

A. In eternity the fact is that Onospherous has left behind blessing for his loved ones but will also himself be highly decorated.

1. We must understand that TRUE BLESSINGS ONLY COME FROM GOD.
2. Satan can provide Pseudo blessing for the unbeliever and reversionistic believers and this is his attempt to duplicate everything that God can provide.
3. Social, sexual, material, promotion, success as blessings from Satan.
4. However, God uses these blessings as part of Divine Discipline for the reversionist believer and therefore they NEVER work out for happiness for them.

B. The blessings of God for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will always lead to greater blessings in eternity.

1. Paul is not demanding here and would not and could not intrude on the sovereignty of God but merely stating the doctrine which is applicable here.
2. Paul is not able to pronounce blessing himself and the last person who was able to pronounce blessing was an apostle and they are all gone and Paul even here could not do so.
3. When a person wishes you upon parting "God bless you" they are totally arrogant and using arrogant speech.
4. Only God can bless based on his Grace.
5. This is the application of the doctrine which certifies that anyone who is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will have Super Grace blessings in 5 categories in time and dying grace and surpassing grace in eternity forever.
6. Paul is wishing that God will bless Onospherous and Paul knows that he has his own Super Grace blessing package and will be beneficiary of surpassing grace in eternity.

- C. Onospherous was a great believer and he was in Super Grace and did hold Super Grace Status Quo until his death and had a great ministry of refreshment and has great blessing in heaven.
 - 1. Many people in heaven will only have the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, Human Good and Evil and there will be vast differences between these believers who did not function to advance in the Spiritual Life in time at all and believers who reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 2. The rewards and blessings God has for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace cannot be expressed in human language.
 - 3. The documented principles from scripture only verify that there will be a VAST difference among believers in eternity in heaven.
- D. V18 was difficult to ascertain a good translation.

2Tim 1:17

v17: but in fact, when he happened to be in Rome not knowing where to find me, he kept on eagerly searching for me diligently and he finally located me

2Tim 1:18

v18: I am confident that the Lord will give to him to discover, as he sought and discovered me in Rome, so that he may discover his own surpassing grace in action or mercy in eternity from the ultimate source Lord in that Day of the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, in fact, how many occasions in Ephesus he Ministered a service of refreshment to me, you, Timothy and Only You, know it better than I do.

Lesson #25 Series # 469 2Tim 2:1

- I. Spiritual Heritage is the manner in which history is changed in any generation by believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - A. People who are trying constantly to make a better neighborhood, city, county, state, country or world for their children or grandchildren.
 - 1. This is a false motivation and false concept in the first place since there is nothing we can do to improve this world in our own generation or any generation BECAUSE Satan is ruler of this world.
 - 2. The entire plan by which he rules the world began with the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and his whole plan and function is Evil and Human Good.
 - 3. This is the incredible genius of Satan and were totally unnecessary when man had a relationship with God in the garden on the basis of creation.
 - 4. When man lived in the garden in innocence and this was man in the garden in relationship with God based on CREATION.
 - 5. Under this relationship Man came into existence as an adult and therefore needed instant appreciation for Grace and the Plan of God and this was provided by means of a Tree and its fruit called the Tree of Lives.
 - i. This is not a tree of eternal life and eating the fruit of this tree would NOT bring Eternal Life but it was a TREE for CAPACITY for life.
 - 6. This was one of the 2 ways in which man oriented to the Plan of God and his grace and the other was the bible class held in the garden in the cool of the evening by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 7. The issue with regard to the creation of man was for him to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
 - 8. Man with Positive Volition toward God and his plan was indicated by the fact that he would eat of the Tree of Lives daily or more and this gave him instant spiritual capacity to appreciate what God had provided for him.
 - 9. With regard to the Angelic Conflict Man must have a choice to choose for the Plan and Policy of God or the Plan and Policy of Satan.
 - 10. Man with Negative Volition toward God and his plan was indicated by the fact that he ate 1 time of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and this brought to him instant Spiritual Death and ended his relationship with God.
 - 11. He also had trees for pleasure for his soul and trees for food for his body and the Tree of Lives by which Adam and Ishah became aware of and appreciated instantly what God had provided.

12. In his innocence relationship with God man did not need knowledge of any aspect of Good and Evil
 13. The innocence relationship with God was a GRACE relationship where God did all the work and providing and man had to simply appreciate what God had provided and continue to enjoy it indefinitely.
- B. Being Strong in Grace (2Tim 2:1) means that we must have capacity to appreciate God and what he provides for us and this capacity comes to us by means of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
1. Originally they came to man in the garden by first by means of the Tree of Lives and then later bible doctrine from Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the garden.
- C. Both good and evil are the genius of Satan.
1. Good is a satanic device to intrude on a grace relationship and to know good and evil is not necessary for a relationship with God therefore it was in the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil forbidden man.
 2. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil contained the elements of Spiritual Death
 3. All Human Good is a sign of spiritual death and the fact that man is constantly trying to do good is indicative that Satan is ruler of this world since man partook of this tree's fruit.
 4. So Good and Evil are representative of the genius of Satan.
 5. A Time came when the woman first and then the man partook of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 6. Once they did this they then had instant understanding of the plan and policy of Satan, Good and Evil and then they were under Spiritual Death and operating under Satan's plan.
 7. From creation to this point Man was ruler of this world but the moment that man ate of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil he became under Spiritual Death but LOST sovereignty over the world.
 8. Satan from that time became and will continue to rule the world until the 2nd advent and millennial reign of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- D. Now today in our time in history since after the fall we come into the world as infants and are born into the world and are BORN under Spiritual Death and under the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
1. We are born to do good and think evil where EVIL is a satanic thought and Good a satanic function.
 2. We are Born with this with parents and other people around us who understand this because this is the plan and policy of Satan and we all as human beings are BORN into this Status Quo of Spiritual Death having the same Old Sin Nature.
 3. Now since the fall of man we must be BORN AGAIN and grace relationship is no longer based on creation but on regeneration which is technical for being born again by faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 4. There is a sense that the CROSS of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is for us a Tree of Life but this is Eternal Life not capacity for life.
 5. **Therefore the Cross plus the daily intake of Bible Doctrine is comparable to the Tree of Lives.**
 6. **The Tree of Lives is exactly what the daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is to the believer after the fall.**
 7. **Our Tree of Lives is Bible Doctrine preserved in the word and as we partake of this on a daily basis just as the man and woman in the garden partook of the Tree of Lives at least daily we come to appreciate who and what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is and break out from under the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.**
- E. When we realize today that the function of our government is one of performing constant Human Good under the principles of the thinking of the satanic policy of EVIL.
1. Satan is a genius far greater than any creature genius and Evil and Good are his systems with Evil being how he thinks and therefore is Satanic Doctrine, Good is how he puts this doctrine into application in his attempt to rule the world.

2. The Thinking of Satan is EVIL, the THINKING of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is Bible Doctrine.
3. Not only does Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ control Human History but he has found a system by which we can DEFEAT Satan and his policy and plan in this world.
4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History:
 - i. Directly through his divine essence
 - ii. Indirectly through the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - iii. Permissive through allowing the Angelic Conflict to be perpetuated throughout Human History.
 - a. This is what allows the concepts of Good and Evil to remain through to the end of the Angelic Conflict Appeal.
5. **We cannot make a better world by anything we do since this is simply improving Satan's world and contributing to the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.**
6. There is one thing which we can do which can change the course of our nation and our generation and that is to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
7. As a believer in Super Grace Status Quo we become a spiritual Atlas holding up, supporting our generation in history and providing indirect blessing for our nation and the world as well.
8. WE can also pass Bible Doctrine onto our children and then they can take up this process and be the spiritual atlas of their generation.
9. As goes the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace so goes every generation of history.
10. A generation in history may be good or bad and this does not depend on the previous generation but entirely on how many people reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in that generation.
11. One generation can turn any nation or group of people around and ONE (1) single Super Grace believer can turn history around as well.

F. Mechanics of spiritual heritage

1. The secret lies in the missing link of Bible Doctrine the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the written word and it being transferred to the soul of the individual believer.
2. This missing link is the Spiritual Gift of Pastor Teacher who must use his spiritual gift and concentration and self discipline to dig out of the scripture principles of Bible Doctrine and then communicate this to his congregation and this is the KEY to spiritual heritage
3. This is why we MUST have Pastor Teachers and why people cannot sit and read a book or the bible itself on their own and grow to any great level in the Spiritual Life.
4. They must get the Bible Doctrine from their one right Pastor Teacher either face to face or from some system of recorded doctrinal presentations.
5. They must stay with the ministry of their own personal right Pastor Teacher and grow with is ministry.

II. Perspicuous Pastors:

- A. Outline
- B. v1-7 5 analogies to Pastoral discipline
 1. Self Discipline of the Pastor Teacher as he studies to prepare and present Bible Doctrine.
 2. Group Discipline of the congregation as the politely sit and concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
- C. V8-13 reasons why pastors suffer (testing of their doctrinal intake)
- D. v14-26 Responsibilities and duties of the pastor, the Job profile of the Pastor Teacher.
 1. These are as important to the congregation believers as they are to the Pastor Teacher because the mechanics of our growth as believers are found in Hebrews and 2Timothy chapter 2
- E. The congregation needs this information in order to choose and retain their right Pastor Teacher.

1. No Pastor Teacher can be in reversionism and be a right Pastor Teacher.
 - i. This is like the concept that NO believer should ever marry an unbeliever this is explicitly forbidden by the bible in ALL CASES.
2. If you are going to grow in the Spiritual Life you must do so under YOUR right Pastor Teacher and he cannot be selected based on his personality, or appeal to you in any way or rapport with you in any way but he is the ONE which God has designed for you to communicate Bible Doctrine to you.
3. The Pastor Teacher is a water boy bringing you daily water of the word of God for refreshment and in a water boy personality is NOT an issue but the only issue is CAN HE DELIVER THE WATER.
4. This is the issue we must understand with regard to the Pastor Teacher.
5. OUR whole Spiritual Life is based on identifying our right Pastor Teacher and then sticking with his ministry ONLY and not being distracted by other pastors or visitors with pleasing personalities and teaching various types of gimmicks or presenting programs which pass for spiritual growth but in reality are systems for entering into reversionism.
6. God does not change his plan because the local church in some area fails but simply raises up other local churches and no organization outside the local church can ever bring to the believer any level of spiritual growth.
7. Local churches are like people and are born under the principle of the autonomous local church and they thrive under doctrine and then begin to get into the social gospel and into Human Good and follow Satan's plan of Evil and build gymnasiums and have all sorts of programs to entertain the children and act as baby sitters keeping them off the street and become lonely heart clubs for the adults and by this means decline and this is because they are no longer fulfilling the purpose of the local church.
8. An organization of any kind which says it can replace the local church is a great heresy and it would be like God saying at the fall the man did not do what he wanted so he will now go to Dogs to solve the Angelic Conflict and man will now crawl and dogs walk on 2 legs and the Angelic Conflict will be resolved by Dogs.
9. All the organizations which break away from the discipline of the local church under a Pastor Teacher with a congregation under strict academic discipline when assembled are in fact breaking away from the Plan of God.
10. The Plan of God is never changed by any human failure and never will be and the local church is the only way for the believer to grow in the Spiritual Life in the Church Age.
11. The key to understanding how the local church can continue to move in the right direction is the Pastor Teacher and he must continue as a student in the word of God and as he grows in grace his policy of grace emerges based on Bible Doctrine.
12. If he declines and becomes lazy and no longer is interested in teaching Bible Doctrine then the congregation will decline with him and a substitution of gimmicks will occur.
13. We therefore must understand the whole function of the Church Age and its pattern.
14. Even though a local church fails this does not JUSTIFY denominations which is a group of local churches recognizing their weaknesses and using each other as crutches and never have been authorized.
15. Strength of any and all local church always resides in the ministry of the word under God the Holy Spirit and the strength always belongs to the Lord therefore the denomination is no more acceptable to God than the organization which breaks from the local church to set us some program or system of pseudo spirituality without a Pastor Teacher.
16. This is a chapter directed primarily to Pastor Teachers but it is a basis for spiritual advance for everyone.
17. God in his sense of humor has used the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher residing in a few males who are the means by which all believers learn Bible Doctrine, grow in grace to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and come to the point of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and enter into Super Grace and receive their Super Grace blessings and HERE begin to glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

18. It is a daunting concept to realize that this phenomenal package of blessing for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will never become real to the believer unless he gets under the ministry and academic discipline of his right Pastor Teacher and stays there.
19. These blessings come in 5 categories:
 - i. Spiritual from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - a. There are pseudo spiritual blessings from Satan as well which come from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - ii. Temporal of wealth, power, prosperity, leadership, etc.
 - a. Satan also has temporal blessings as ruler of this world but they are pseudo temporal blessings which are not permanent.
 - iii. Blessing by Association whereby those who are close to you receive blessing by being near to your blessings and from God at times directly including local, regional, national and world blessing.
 - a. Satan has a pseudo blessing by association as well whereby people who cater to satanic power are promoted and pushed ahead and benefit those around them.
 - iv. Historical Impact blessing where we have our spiritual heritage concept of supporting our generation and passing on the doctrine and principles for a good generation to our children.
 - a. Satan has a pseudo historical impact system based on Human Good and our congress has said in the past that they are making Laws now which will help our future generations whereas in reality they are destroying the next generation.
 - v. Dying Blessing where the believer has greater blessing in his death than he had in his whole life.
 - a. Satan has no counterpart for this.
20. Receiving all this from God means sitting under the ministry of a Pastor Teacher who no matter his personality or appeal to you TEACHES proper Bible Doctrine consistently to you.
21. The Pastor Teacher is like a restaurant waiter or water boy on a job but in his sense of humor God turns this all upside down by giving the Pastor Teacher maximum authority in the local church based on his teaching of Bible Doctrine.
22. The importance of discipline in the Spiritual Life is clearly put out in the middle of this chapter for us.

III. 5 Analogies of Pastoral Discipline

A. Grace Discipline – The Student

1. This demonstrates that GRACE is definitely related to DISCIPLINE.
2. Grace is not a handout in life but based on discipline and we readily can see that the people who have the greatest capacity for life, who have the most in life and who have the greatest capacity for life are those with discipline
3. Every person in the United States of America in some aspect of their life has been a student in come capacity.
4. Everyone has been tempted at least one time in life to refute, resent, discredit some professor or teacher who was teaching some thing in your life under whom you have found yourself in academic discipline.
5. This is very important to understand this and we must realize that it is wrong to teach children once a week and adults every night and this was the origin of the Prep School of Berachah.
6. Parents are to teach their children at home and then get more in bible class for children and eventually enter the general congregation as a graduation to a higher level.

- #### B. There must be total autonomy of the local church always and no interference by one pastor over another pastor's ministry.

1. If there cannot be freedom in the Spiritual Life there cannot be freedom in national life and freedom starts with the autonomous local church and the rise of denominations destroys this.
 2. This began in the 1850's and war between the states when denominations began to rise and we have more of them in the United States of America than in any other nation and therefore trends in our nation have gone as they will hand in hand with spiritual trends.
 3. We have the plethora of denominations in the United States of America which have destroyed the principle of freedom, just as we see our government STILL trying to take away our guns for OUR good and they are going to violate our freedom, privacy and property and take them and then our freedom of choosing health insurance etc etc.
 4. This becomes an infringement on our freedom in every way and FREEDOM in the United States of America has been being sacrificed for about ½ of our total history for the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
- C. What is the role and function of the Pastor Teacher when he is in reversionism and out of fellowship with God.
1. There must be a relationship between the Pastor Teacher and his congregation and it must be one of ACADEMIC DISCIPLINE in which the language, personality, peculiarities of the Pastor Teacher must be eliminated and there must be discipline and rapport based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and communication of Bible Doctrine.
- D. The discipline of the local church with Pastor Teacher over the congregation is one of ACADEMIC Discipline and only applies when the congregation is in the classroom of the local church.
1. Otherwise the believer is free to live life as unto the Lord on his own
 2. He can take in Bible Doctrine or NOT.
 3. This generally means matriculation which in this case is a regular engagement in bible study in some way.
 4. If you do this it means that you are under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and recognize the authority of the communicator of Bible Doctrine and you are in fact UNDER this academic discipline.
 5. Now should any believer intrude on the privacy of another member of the congregation at any time the Pastor Teacher, UNDER Academic Discipline has the authority as the Pastor Teacher to remove you from the congregation to PROTECT the congregation and so that it will continue to have PRIVACY and FREEDOM and the right to come listen to the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
- E. Paul was the one who trained Timothy in his seminary Acts 20:4 so Timothy is a theological Student of Paul.
1. Paul speaks to Timothy under this principle in both books of Timothy as Timothy was always his student and had been left by Paul in Ephesus.
 2. Apostles had plenipotentiary power to regulate things in all local churches and this continued until the canon of scripture was completed in AD96.
 - i. The gift of Apostle is no longer extent in the Church Age.
 3. Timothy is being encouraged to move and fulfill his objectives having made recovery from reversionism.
 - i. He is told to be invigorated and develop greater and greater INNER strength from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- F. The Pastor Teacher must continue in his spiritual advance from his own personal study.
1. The spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is the means of communicating the doctrine he has discerned to his congregation.
 2. The congregation cannot advance by their own spiritual study without this spiritual gift and this is a bit of arrogance which occasionally props up in the believer.
 3. The congregation gets their spiritual growth through a combination of teaching from the one with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and Academic Discipline in the classroom.
 4. In conversational classes where there is a leader and then each topic is "discussed" among the students there is not spiritual growth at all since there is no discipline and

- there is no authority because there is no superiority of understanding being communicated just a conversation back and forth.
5. This builds a great rapport of arrogance and no discipline means no spiritual advance.
 6. It is a rude awakening to realize that your personal spiritual growth depends on some jackass who gets up in front of a congregation and spouts off.
 7. This is however the system called GRACE and the man who stands and communicates does not earn nor deserve it but if he is faithful in self discipline in doing it and he is your right Pastor Teacher then this is the only way for you to grow in the Spiritual Life.
 8. Your whole spiritual growth depends on this guy and you can even go to other Pastor Teachers but they will not help you grow in the Spiritual Life.
 9. The teaching of another Pastor Teacher may in fact help drive you back to your right Pastor Teacher and it should.
 10. You only have to have a Relaxed Mental Attitude with regard to your Pastor Teacher and have the ability to concentrate and remain under discipline to grow in the Spiritual Life.
- G. The Pastor Teacher and the congregation must have consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and consistent use of rebound and function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. The pastor in his personal and private studying and then teaching
 2. The congregation in sitting and learning Bible Doctrine from him under discipline.
 3. It is God the Holy Spirit who makes the word of God real to us both the Pastor Teacher and congregation and he is the means of learning Bible Doctrine **John 14:26, 16:12-15, 1Cor 2:9-16, 1John 2:27**
- H. We all possess an involuntary respiratory center in our brain stem which keeps man breathing while asleep, even in church while sleeping...
1. When you are asleep you continue to breathe because God provided this neural mechanism.
 2. You cannot in fact hold your breath and commit suicide.
 3. By holding your breath you increase CO₂ in your blood and this triggers your IRC into action to make you breathe
 4. God will always ensure that there is enough O₂ in the air despite the panic of the environmentalists
 5. When you breathe there is a minor problem in that you do not want the AIR to reach the stomach but flow into the lungs.
 6. In the throat there is an epiglottis which directs the air into the lungs and into the bronchi branches to the alveoli where it is exchanged with CO₂ in the lungs which then flows out of the lungs again.
 7. In teaching Bible Doctrine the objective is the soul and the believer when he is learning Bible Doctrine he inhales the doctrine into his soul under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and at the same time he exhales preconceived ideas from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 8. In the process of taking in Bible Doctrine when we exhale we remove Evil as Human Viewpoint and Satanic Doctrine and the doctrine comes in the exhale is removal of false information from satanic doctrine.
 9. When you inhale and exhale in the process of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine you do not retain all the doctrine you take in but what remains is similar to the residual volume of the lungs after exhale.
 10. It is the repetition of inhale and exhale which allows the build up of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul over a period of time replacing all Human Viewpoint and satanic doctrine with Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment.
- I. Timothy and each of us as believers when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace MUST HOLD our Status Quo of Super Grace by continued Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

- I. People tend to ignore the importance of self discipline in any given facet of life and it is an essential thing in the function of the Royal Family of God.
 - A. Any system of royalty ever developed was developed through ability.
 1. All royalty whether by birth or acquired is always based on great strength and stability of soul.
 2. Therefore royalty is always expected to be a bit different than the common person in the Human Race.
 3. Royalty is always expected to have more of everything which requires strength, courage, integrity, better manners, ability to think under pressure and disaster and have the demeanor which goes with that.
 - i. Manners were originally a sign of superiority and royalty and the peasants had no manners at all.
 4. Good manners by some are considered a sign of weakness but in reality they are a sign of STRENGTH and in a man they are a sign of manliness.
 - i. Any male can act, think and be an animal but to have good manners is a wonderful thing.
 - ii. Good manners to royalty is exactly what Bible Doctrine is to the Royal Family of God and they both make us think in a different way and gives us higher standards of honor and integrity and places us under a plan which takes us through time and into eternity and making fun of manners is like making fun of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. Good manners are a sign of integrity and honor of soul and great ability to remain objective in spite of all attempts to misunderstand the one with manners.
 5. Good manners like everything else of value in life must be acquired through great self discipline.
 - i. The thing which has often made greatness out of any group in royalty is that they are brought up under very STRICT DISCIPLINE and are taught self discipline.
 - ii. Many systems of manners appear to have no meaning but in fact they are very meaningful in the area of self discipline and represent the exercise of self discipline which is the KEY to capacity for life.
 - iii. Therefore we have seen historically that the people who have had the greatest capacity for life are those who have great self discipline.
 - iv. The unbeliever can have great capacity for life and enjoy many things in life because of his self discipline.
 - v. One of the greatest manifestations of that self discipline is Good manners.
 6. Generally at least in the past the most appalling thing is to realize that Christians generally have very poor manners and this is only exceeded by their rampant legalism.
 - i. It is more than tragic that people generally think that if you are a little different and don't conform to the idiocies of society that you should be put into some kind of zoo.
 - ii. The reality is that the salt of the earth is always different and in this Church Age we as believers are already in the Royal Family of God and therefore royalty and the only step remaining to be taken is to BECOME a part of the Salt of of the Earth.
 - iii. From our acquisition of our royalty at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Salt of the Earth is a very big step and the thing which is missing is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv. In order for this step to be taken there must be GREAT Self Discipline and Respect for Authority.
 7. The principle of respect for authority, concepts of good manners and principle of self discipline are all tied together.
 - i. Self discipline and respect for authority are related to grace.
- II. Doctrine of GRACE
 - A. Definition:

1. Grace is all that God is free to do for man on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - i. The whole point of grace is that God is free to Give.
 - ii. The problem is that the effort is not with us since we cannot give or provide anything for God, we cannot bless God nor anyone else apart from God either.
 - iii. Only God can bless us.
2. God is free to give to us and bless us and not destroy his character and if he could destroy his character then God would not be GOD.
 - i. The basic principle and concept of God taught in Bible Doctrine is that his character is indestructible, inviolable, unchangeable and there is not way you can destroy the character of God and not even GOD can destroy his character or violate or change it in any way.
 - ii. God is indestructible, indefatigable, immutable and there is NO WAY that God can change.
3. Therefore if God is going to be free to do anything for us then this freedom must come from the consistency of his essence which MUST be consistent.
 - i. He must still have equal amounts of Love and Righteousness and Justice if he is to give us anything and this must be the same as before he gave.
4. God has a problem which we cannot appreciate and this involves how to PROVIDE for sinful man:
 - i. How to provide Salvation first and all that goes with it and still keep his character.
 - ii. God must be free to give Salvation and Everything from salvation right on down through to eternity and everything provided from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Surpassing Grace blessings
 - iii. This includes rebound process, logistical grace, Bravo Grace, Super Grace blessings including Dying Grace, and surpassing grace blessings and rewards for eternity and CHARLIE GRACE to try to redirect those who deviate from the blessing path of the Plan of God in time.
 - iv. God had to be totally free to give salvation and even the greatest blessings of life in time at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without compromise in any way to his essence.
5. Grace is God's ability and freedom to bless us to the maximum and still retain every characteristic of the Essence of God without compromise to any part of his character.
 - i. God is free to bless and keep alive each of us right now despite our failing by Sin, Human Good, legalism, Evil, and all other failures of reversionism and not compromise his character.
6. Grace is the total freedom of God to provide anything for you, do anything for you, to love you to the maximum at any time after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and forever thereafter.
 - i. This is an incomprehensible freedom.
 - ii. We have freedom of soul but do not in reality have much other freedom being NOT unrestrained or unrestricted in this life.
7. God is perfect and a perfect God cannot ever get sentimental about YOU because he sees inside of each of us and sees the Old Sin Nature and all the other crap within which clutter up our life.
 - i. God still loves each of us as believers with a perfect love but this is inconsequential since he could not give us all the things he has for us from this love.
 - ii. BECAUSE, He also has Absolute Justice and Absolute Righteousness and immutability and omniscience all being perfect.
 - iii. When you think every part of the Essence of God is perfect it is a pretty tough chore to be free to give us everything, exceedingly and abundantly above all we can ask or imagine.

- iv. God is free to give us more things than we will ever get from him and he is free to give us greater blessing than we will ever have in life unless we stick with the plan and move ahead to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - v. His freedom to give to us is far greater than our capacity to receive the gifts.
 - vi. GRACE is not just UNMERITED FAVOR and this is some idiotic believer with the GIMMIES toward God.
 - vii. Grace is much greater than that and is God's freedom to give us the maximum which life has to offer and still not compromise his essence or character.
8. Grace is god's freedom and consistency to express not only his love but his entire essence to mankind without compromise of his essence.
9. No one can truly give and rightly give unless they have freedom to do so.
- i. Everything which God gives to us were his to give.
 - ii. Everything we have which we will keep the longest are God's and the stability of that gift is because it always was god's to give to you.
 - iii. The things which we receive from God are things we cannot lose unless it is his will for us to lose them because what God gives us he also protect after he gives them to us.
 - iv. We will have the things we receive from God under the framework of his will forever and the only thing which can destroy them is our own intrusion into the system with Negative Volition and the destruction of GRACE in our soul.
 - v. Grace is the system by which he is free to give you everything in life and the giver protects them by his power and ability.
 - vi. He can do this despite our having an Old Sin Nature and being unqualified for his gifts.
10. All of us as believers carry deep in our souls the idea that we will work something out of God by being just a little better than we have been or being nicer or giving up this or that or by doing this or that and this is an INSULT to the perfect genius of God.
- i. He found a way to BLESS each of us and still not compromise his character and now we insult his character like it depends on something we can think, say or do.
 - ii. Tithing is a prime example of an overwhelming INSULT to God in that it is saying that for 10% of your measly income God will return blessing to you.
 - iii. This is saying that God can keep his essence all together and prevent compromise to the relationship of the Justice of God, Righteousness of God and Love of God is we just kick in 10% of our income.
 - iv. If you don't then there will be a clash between the Righteousness of God and Love of God and then he will not bless you.
 - v. Tithing, burning candles, working in the church, witnessing, prayer, all done in an effort to gain the approbation and blessing from God are actually people continuing to EAT from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - vi. The reality is that in his genius in Eternity Past he put everything together and then set the plan in motion and it will be completed and fulfilled.
11. Grace is the Plan of God on behalf of man beginning at the cross and is both the plan and policy of God regarding mankind.
- i. His plan and policy are both called grace because this is how the character of God remains intact in dealing with mankind.
 - ii. Grace is the plan, the policy, the function, the mechanics of divine Modus Operandi.
 - iii. Under Grace God does all the work and providing and man does all the receiving.
12. God does all the thinking as well.
- i. Grace is not designed for us to think but simply to accept the ideas of God.
 - ii. This is where Bible Doctrine comes in because Bible Doctrine is simply the thinking of God.
 - iii. When you have a conflict between what Bible Doctrine says and what we think DUH!!! We are wrong.

- B. Concept:
1. Grace depends on the Essence of God and character of God.
 2. Therefore grace depends on who and what God is.
 3. Grace is what God can do for man and be consistent with his essence.
 4. Grace is God's relationship with the believer as well as his way of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 5. Grace is all that God can do for man from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Eternity totally apart from man's ability, talent, thinking and planning.
 6. Grace is therefore the genius of God and Bible Doctrine is the revelation of that genius.
- C. The issue for the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the point of physical death
1. The great enemy of grace is the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 2. Good is legalism, Evil is the thinking of Satan superimposed or inculcated into mankind causing him to be working for everything under the function of Good.
 3. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil means KNOWLEDGE of Satan's thinking and EVIL is the knowledge of Satan's thinking.
 4. Good is how Evil is put into function or the application of Evil.
 5. Evil is Satanic Doctrine while Good is Satan's application of that doctrine.
 6. Evil and Good are what man DID NOT need in the garden in a creation relationship with God and even today Man does not need Evil nor Good to have a regeneration relationship with God and never will.
 7. When we are inculcated by the Evil of Satan this is reversionism and then we function according to the satanic principles.
 8. Satan has no character, he is smart and by our standards a super genius but has no character.
 9. Satan has a lot of morality because this is part of evil and good functions and presented this to the man and woman after the fall in the garden who were Naked and they being Right Man and Right Woman should have stayed naked but Satan got them to make adjustment to each other and put on clothes and be Goody Two Shoes.
 10. They did this because they now had instant knowledge of Good and Evil and instant reversionism.
 - i. Up till that time they had instant capacity from the Tree of Lives and now they have instant understanding of the plan and policy of Satan and complied.
 - ii. They thought EVIL, OH My there is something wrong under this plan of being naked so they immediately went out and made crude clothing from fig leaves.
 - iii. The all learned as we must learn that satanic morality is no better than satanic thinking being genius but sloppy but it appeals to man and makes him feel better
 - iv. The Lord said to Adam and Ishah, "who told you that you were Naked"? The concept then is "have you been eating of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil HA, so that is it".
 - v. Here they were in the garden living together for an indefinite period of time enjoying each other mentally, spiritually, and physically and never even knew they were Naked and this was because they had no knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - vi. For them under the GRACE system of God there was nothing wrong with their being Naked
 - vii. The interesting thing is that there never was an issue of sex being bad or wrong or being naked bad or wrong UNTIL they ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and once they had INSTANT understanding of Evil and Good
 - viii. It is truly interesting that the first thing the man and woman did after their transgression of the plan of God was Human Good and sin came later.
 11. This is the antithesis of Grace and the issue is Grace vs Good and Evil.
 - i. The great enemy to Grace is Legalism, man's intrusion into the Plan of God with his own works, plans, schemes and efforts.

- ii. Good and Evil is the sum total of the plans, schemes, talents, abilities and works of mankind apart from GOD.
 - iii. The believer must learn to sort out the differences between Grace and Legalism and often clings to some talent or ability, or plan or gimmick to infiltrate the Plan of God but anything man provides or tries to throw into the Plan of God which GOD provided would destroy the plan itself.
 - 12. The only way we can avoid intrusion into the Plan of God with our works and our abilities is through a maximum understanding of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Anything man adds to the Plan is contrary to the Plan of God.
 - ii. The Plan of God called operation Grace is never destroyed or neutralized because it rejects Human thinking, energy of the flesh, ability, talents and Human Viewpoint plans.
 - iii. Legalism and Grace cannot coexist and are mutually exclusive.
- D. Grace and the new contract for the church:
 - 1. Glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by resurrection, ascension and Session is the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict.
 - 2. This dramatic victory interrupted the Jewish age in order that the Royal Family of God might be formed to commemorate that victory.
 - 3. The Royal Family of God is formed by means of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit in the Church Age.
 - 4. The new covenant or contract to the church is related to the biblical doctrine of Sanctification.
 - 5. Grace found a way to take man created inferior to the angels and make him ultimately superior the angelic creatures.
 - 6. This is accomplished in the 3 phases of sanctification.
 - i. Positional Sanctification is the first and is the greatest thing which God the Father can do for the believer is to make him EXACTLY like his son, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - a. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - b. Regeneration enters all believers in all of Human History into the family of God and all receive the Righteousness of God by imputation.
 - c. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit enters the believers in the Church Age into the Royal Family of God.
 - d. As part of the Royal Family of God we receive much more than just the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - e. This first sanctification provides for us as royalty and also includes the fact that EACH member of the Royal Family of God is POSITIONALLY higher than angels.
 - f. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is battlefield royalty seated at the right hand of God the Father and has received his royal title of King of Kings and Lord of Lords.
 - g. This makes Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Resurrection Body higher than the angels and we in union with Christ from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit at our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are positionally higher than angels EVEN NOW.
 - h. This is our royal escutcheon.
 - ii. Experiential Sanctification our objective in the Spiritual Life in time and is our effort to achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - a. This is the balance of residence where by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Metabolized Bible Doctrine balances in our soul and this is the point of experiential sanctification.

- iii. Ultimate Sanctification is the result of transfer from time to eternity and receipt of our own Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and Human Good and the Lake of Fire.
 - a. In addition for those who maintain their Status Quo in Super Grace they receive surpassing grace blessings and rewards for all eternity.
- E. Five Stages of Grace:
1. Saving Grace:
 - i. Every believer has tasted the Grace of God at least 1 time at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with receipt of Saving Grace Heb 6:4, 1Pet 2:3
 - a. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God each believer receives 39 irrevocable assets for the Spiritual Life which cannot be revoked nor destroyed.
 - b. Because of propitiation EVERY believer is under maximum blessing from God and he is FREE to exercise his love and not compromise his character in providing the maximum to you.
 - c. God is also free to exercise his love in providing all the discipline needed to bring us around to Bible Doctrine and if after the elapse of a certain period of time and you do not come around to Bible Doctrine with Positive Volition and spiritual growth then God is perfectly free to make your life hell on earth and take you home under maximum Divine Discipline so that when you reach heaven you will be totally wrung out under the principle of Divine Discipline.
 - d. Who the Lord loves he chastens and skins alive with a whip.
 - ii. Saving Grace from God is based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and is the beginning of the Plan of God.
 - iii. Capacity for Grace like capacity for life is based on the amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv. The concept here is obvious in that the believer is saved by the work of the trinity:
 - a. God the Father planned it and oversees it.
 - b. God the Son executed it
 - c. God the Holy Spirit reveals and empowers it.
 2. Living Grace or Logistical Grace
 - i. Living grace is all that God is free to do for the believer while he lives under the rule of Satan in the world of Satan.
 - a. Every moment we live we are under the rulership of Satan who gained this rulership when Adam relinquished it at his fall.
 - b. We therefore live in an area of conflict of interests where our soul is the battleground.
 - ii. Under Logistical Grace God must provide
 - a. For the Body our HOUSE in order that it might function and have continued physical life.
 - i) Good Quality Air
 - a) Ecology is legalistic nosiness into the plan of God.
 - b) It is like all bleeding heard do good functions EVIL.
 - ii) Food to eat
 - iii) Clothing to wear
 - iv) Shelter in which we live
 - v) Transportation of some sort
 - b. For the Soul in the house
 - i) Right Pastor Teacher
 - ii) Classroom of the local church
 - iii) Bible as the textbook
 - iv) Good manners, respect for authority, concentration, academic discipline needed for inculcating Bible Doctrine.

3. Super Grace which occurs at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
 - i. There are 5 categories under our package of Super Grace blessings and this is the BEST it can get in time
 - ii. Spiritual
 - iii. Temporal
 - iv. Association
 - a. Starting with those in the immediate periphery moving out to your neighborhood, city, county, region, state, all the way into the nation.
 - b. This is where the SALT of the earth concept comes into the picture.
 - v. Historical
 - a. Spiritual heritage concepts
 - vi. Dying Grace
 - a. The transition from time to eternity which brings us greater blessing in dying than we have while living on the earth.
 - b. This is the frosting on the cake of a wonderful life and is better than the best of Super Grace.

4. Surpassing Grace is even better than all of this.

F. Modus Vivendi of Grace

1. It is the means of Growth 2Pet 3;18
2. It is the basis for stability, Heb 13:9, 1Pet 5:12, Heb 12:28
3. It is the basis for production 1Cor 15:10, 2Cor 6:1

G. Failure to use Grace Gal 5:4, Heb 12:15

1. Great descriptions of Reversionism.

H. Grace in Suffering 2Cor 12:7-10

I. Axioms of Grace

1. God is perfect and the Plan of God is perfect
2. A perfect plan can only originate and function from the source of a perfect God.
3. If man can do anything meritorious in the Plan of God it is no longer perfect, man being imperfect he cannot contribute to a perfect plan.
4. A Plan is no stronger than its weakest link and there are NO weak links in the Grace Plan of God.
5. Grace excludes all human merit, ability, good, legalism, Self Righteousness, Arrogance and EVIL.
6. Legalism is the enemy to Grace and there is no place for Legalism or Human Good in the Plan of God.
7. All legalism and Human Good is associated with the greatest of Mental Attitude Sins Pride or Arrogance.

J. 4 Areas in which Arrogance rejects Grace.

K. Grace in Innocence

1. Man's relationship with God originally was based on CREATION rather than regeneration.
2. Man came from God as a full adult therefore he had to possess instant appreciation for the grace Plan of God
3. This was provided by:
 - i. Tree of Lives providing instant capacity for grace.
 - ii. Daily Bible study providing the maintenance for this capacity.

III. The analogies in 2nd Timothy

A. The analogy to a STUDENT which is teaching the principle of GRACE Discipline

B. The second analogy is to Banking and is Academic Discipline.

1. Under academic discipline there is concentration and recognition of authority.
2. This is Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine
3. The choice of picking a person to be a Pastor Teacher is not the function of any other pastor or anyone at all but God the Holy Spirit chooses who will receive the spiritual gift.

4. Those who learn Bible Doctrine and respond to their spiritual gift will move ahead and function under their spiritual gift.
 - i. No pastor picks key personnel for function in the local church and for movement into the ministry of Pastor Teacher.
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher must stay out of God's Way and he is not able to take God's place and cannot even run his own life let alone someone else's life.
 - iii. We must watch out for "experts" in the field of Personnel for most often these are simply attracted to others for one reason or another.
 - iv. You as a Pastor Teacher cannot run the lives of those in your congregation, everyone must take in the Bible Doctrine you teach and digest it or spit it out and run with it either way.
 - v. The only time the Pastor Teacher can interfere in the life of anyone is when they are interfering with the life or privacy of someone else in the congregation and then the Pastor Teacher must interfere with their life and throw them out.
5. Hearing is one of the greatest overlooked virtues in history and we need friends who are very talkative and just sit and listen to them so that we can be amazed at what we hear.
6. Timothy was a Wimp but he did this he listened and responded to the teaching of Paul.
 - i. As a wimp like all wimps he was ARROGANT and hid it behind pseudo humility.
 - ii. All wimps hide their arrogance behind their fake humility and are definitely ARROGANT.
 - iii. It is very very difficult for a person in reversionism to recover because he must get under the authority of someone else and this is a crushing blow to his arrogance.
 - iv. Timothy did this because he realized as we all must that Bible Doctrine is much more important than persons.
 - v. Recognizing the authority of one's right Pastor Teacher is far more important than anything else in life.
7. Timothy accepted the authority of Paul and recovered and NO ONE ever recovers from reversionism except by the humiliating experience of getting under the authority of someone you don't like and you don't like them because you are in reversionism and they are putting out Bible Doctrine as first priority.
 - i. There is therefore obviously a natural antagonism and total personality conflict.
 - ii. Therefore there comes a point where enough Bible Doctrine will remove the arrogance and replace it with respect for the authority that caused concentration for a short time on a daily basis.
8. Timothy loved Paul but in reversionism it is still very difficult to submit to the authority of another you being totally arrogant.
 - i. Only when one begins to get out of reversionism is there any possibility of reviving friendship and love for another.
9. (gr) Martous (ff spelling) is NOT MARTYR as some translate or transliterate it
 - i. (gr) comes from mermeros == remember and remember again and therefore carrying it in the mind therefore to truly remember.
 - a. (gr) mermaino == to remember
 - ii. Timothy is reminded by Paul that he learned Bible Doctrine in his seminary along with many other legitimate students who are qualified witnesses to that teaching and learning having been there along with Timothy.
 - iii. First Timothy had to BE in the seminary of Paul, just as we must be in our local church or area for bible study
 - iv. He had to then concentrate on what was being taught, again just as we must concentrate on the Bible Doctrine being taught.
 - v. As a result of concentration there is then perspicacity and assimilation of the FACTS.

- vi. The WITNESS then is made when he is able to communicate the facts he say and learned to others in the court of in the case of Timothy as a Pastor Teacher to others in his congregation.
 - vii. The perspicacity of Timothy under reversionism caused him to recover and now he is using his study of Bible Doctrine to TEACH others in his congregation.
 - viii. Therefore (gr) Martous is a male believer who has the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher who learns Bible Doctrine in some venue so that he can later communicate it to others in a congregation.
 - ix. In a sense every time a Pastor Teacher stands at the pulpit he is functioning as a “Witness in a Court” and is communicating the Evidence which is Bible Doctrine from the word of God.
 - x.
10. What we call ‘witnessing’ is not at all a witness function but is personal or individual evangelism.

2Tim 2:1

v1: You and only you, having now recovered from reversionism, Consequently or Therefore, in view of the facts that believers must grow up and perpetuate spiritual heritage the only way to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and glorify God and complement the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Angelic Conflict, my theological student under strict academic discipline, keep on being invigorated, receiving inner strength or becoming powerful, by means of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, in the sphere of that Grace which is in THE Christ Jesus (Positional Sanctification)

Lesson #27 Series # 469 2Tim 2:2

- I. Spiritual Growth and the 2 part importance of Bible Doctrine.
 - A. First the Pastor Teacher must be focused on seminary studies of Bible Doctrine in order that he might totally and thoroughly inculcate the information and be able to communicate this to his congregation.
 - 1. In addition as per Timothy he having entered into reversionism also must focus on Bible Doctrine in order to remove the saturation of Evil thinking which comes with reversionism and replace it with the thinking of Christ, Bible Doctrine.
 - i. This will also enable him to move in spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 2. In addition when a Pastor Teacher enters into reversionism he no longer technically has a congregation since he cannot think Bible Doctrine and therefore cannot serve the Lord by teaching Bible Doctrine.
 - 3. It is essential therefore for the Pastor Teacher to have a great deal of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which came to him through his consistent self discipline.
 - B. Self Discipline is required when learning Bible Doctrine for all believers especially the one preparing for becoming a Pastor Teacher or recovering from reversionism.
 - 1. There is always going to be something in that which is taught which will irritate the believer or something about the one teaching which will distract the believer but self discipline is needed to overcome the distraction and focus and concentrate in order to gain the doctrinal principles.
 - 2. With self discipline the believer is able to continually and consistently take in Bible Doctrine and continue to grow and maintain objectivity and eventually reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 3. NO ONE ever reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace without incredible academic discipline and there must be great SELF discipline as well as the needed group discipline.
 - 4. Each believer makes a contribution to discipline in bible class by exhibiting good poise, good manners, objectivity, and doing everything needed to avoid distraction of others and thus contributing to group discipline.

5. Timothy had great self discipline when in the seminary of Paul and this served him well by facilitating the focus needed to recover from reversionism and grow in the Spiritual Life back to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- C. The doctrine which is referred to here is placed into an analogy of a Banking System of the Roman Empire which was excellent.
1. It as does doctrine require deposit of funds in order to gain the benefits from those funds.
 2. When the KJV of the bible was written there was a VERY shoddy banking system in England and this is seen the terrible translation here since there was no Frame of Reference for it there.
 3. Here the doctrine taught to other members of the congregation is DEPOSITED with them like funds into a good banking system in order to reap interest benefits.
- D. There is a technical point to remember about the time of Rome.
1. There is a great difference between the roman empire and the roman republic.
 2. The republic was UNI LINGUAL while the Roman Empire was BILINGUAL with Koine Greek being the major language EAST of the Adriatic Sea and Latin being the major language west of the Adriatic and these 2 languages being almost exact equivalents in meaning of context.
 3. Koine Greek became the OFFICIAL language by the time Rome had expanded to the borders of the Persian Empire.
 4. Therefore the whole system of writing of the New Testament Scripture makes it very easy to discover the meaning of the words since at the time of writing the Latin and Greek are exact equivalents.
 5. The ministry therefore is now regarded under the analogy of Banking in V2 and this is the 2nd analogy to the ministry of Pastor Teacher and the first was that of STUDENT in V1.
- E. Timothy in his ministry and his local church in Ephesus had certain male believers who came constantly under his ministry since Ephesus was the center of Christianity between Jerusalem in the East and Rome in the West.
1. Timothy is NOW the Pastor Teacher in the Key church for the next generation of church history.
 2. Timothy was a communicator of the FACTS of Bible Doctrine and his courtroom was the local church in Ephesus
 3. He had under his ministry certain male believers scattered in his congregation and who at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God received from the sovereign decision of God the Holy Spirit the Spiritual Gift of Pastor Teacher.
 4. They are nothing special in these men among the others in his congregation they have no stereotyped personality and are a selection of the AVERAGE individuals of their time.
 5. These men sat in the congregation of Timothy and then eventually were ones to stand and communicate what they had learned to others.
 6. Eventually they discover that they must study constantly since they have a deadline each day and will have one until the day they die and therefore must study constantly in order to teach.
- F. The discipline you get into the classroom of the local church plus discipline gotten in military service or unreasonable parents or extreme academic preparation is UNBEATABLE for getting into the ministry and functioning properly.
1. It is beneficial to have functioned under some UNJUST situation and realize that the ones over you represent authority even though it is not very good execution of authority.
 2. One way or another you must have GREAT preparation which comes from discipline + Bible Doctrine.
 3. If you fail in the initial preparation and acceptance of authority then you will not get to be a Pastor Teacher but remain in life with the spiritual gift and function in some other occupation of profession.
 4. The men who make it to becoming a Pastor Teacher have Spiritual Growth + Concentrated Self Discipline

- G. As Timothy and other Pastor Teachers are putting out Bible Doctrine in their teaching to the congregation they are and must constantly consider that they are also preparing some males for the execution of their own spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher as well.
1. Timothy is now faced with a command and it is an order to make a deposit with these men who have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and are in the process of being prepared.
 2. There is a significant difference here and those men who are aware that they have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher have a tendency of being more careful with their notes and concentrate more and work harder and organize the material they are learning better.
 3. Then they study it again and again and read it before class or whatever is needed to bring it to their focus.
 4. The male believer who is focused like this for the preparation of his spiritual gift must not lose touch with reality and get into an extremely strict organization of their time.
 5. These people are often seen clearly when they have over organized by their total lack of a sense of humor because of pushing too hard.
 6. The person in such an intense focus on time organization MUST relax at some point and if they cannot they need to engage in some sort of intense workout or RUN to get away from the intensity of their studies.
- H. Timothy has the authority in his congregation and the men studying under him in preparation for their spiritual gift to function have no authority.
1. Paul as an apostle had to travel extensively and had a group of men who followed with him and by this function he had a traveling seminary.
 2. Timothy as a Pastor Teacher will remain in Ephesus in one place and his seminary will be his congregation.
 3. In this sense for the many men who entered his congregation with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher this is their seminary.
 4. For the rest of the congregation it is the basis for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and fulfilling the objectives of remaining alive in the devils world.
 5. Therefore in Timothy's congregation and in all congregations in the Church Age there is a dual objective.
 - i. There are many believers who are focused on their study of Bible Doctrine in order to advance in the Spiritual Life and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and enjoy their Super Grace blessings in 5 categories in time and surpassing grace blessings in eternity.
 - ii. For some males there is an issue when in the congregation learning Bible Doctrine as they must first determine if they have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
 - a. This occurs by consistent inculcation of Bible Doctrine where there comes a point of discovery through the intake of Bible Doctrine that the spiritual gift which they have been given is that of Pastor Teacher.
 - b. The only way to discover their spiritual gift is through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iii. Those men in the congregation who have received the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and are now aware must now be preparing continually by gaining an understanding of Bible Doctrine prior to their other preparation for function as the Pastor Teacher.
 - a. For every believer there is a different preparation factor.
 - iv. These men with the gift of Pastor Teacher must remain under the strictest academic and self discipline so that the DEPOSIT of Bible Doctrine in their soul will in the future be able to bear fruit as they function as a Pastor Teacher themselves.

6. Negative believers in a congregation are OK hanging around as long as they do not hinder other believers from their intake of Bible Doctrine and as long as they do not violate the privacy of other believers.
 7. In any congregation as the pastor teaches Bible Doctrine there is for the believer spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and for the believer with the gift of Pastor Teacher there is spiritual growth and preparation for the ministry.
 8. Paul is reminding us all that in any given congregation there are men who need training for the ministry of Pastor Teacher and they need to listen and learn doctrine.
 9. Every pastor in teaching his congregation must always remember that there will be men in his congregation who will also be teaching a congregation themselves.
 - i. There are times when the Pastor Teacher can be encouraged by the member of the congregation advancing in the Spiritual Life and some men successfully preparing for the ministry and there are times when it is very discouraging to see some who never advance and in fact peel off and fail in the Spiritual Life.
 10. It is very discouraging when you know that the time in which WE live calls for intensity beyond imagination for intake of Bible Doctrine and if we could see at one time all the things going on in our nation over the past 50+ years we would pray for the rapture or jump into a volcano.
 11. The Pastor Teacher must produce in the content of his teaching the Exegesis, the Categories and Analysis which trains not only his congregation as a whole but future pastors specifically.
 - i. Therefore The Pastor Teacher must explain the exegesis as well as give analysis of the material being taught.
 12. This command demands that the Pastor Teacher of the local church deposit doctrine with his congregation and this deposit of Bible Doctrine into the Royal Family of God is the only way they can grow.
 13. The only exception to this is the man who at a given stage of growth having the gift of Pastor Teacher can actually study a text and grow himself.
 - i. This is how Timothy was actually able to grow himself to recover from reversionism.
 - ii. When we as a believer without the gift of Pastor Teacher get into reversionism the only way for us to recover is to sit consistently and listen to the person who nauseates us over and over again under extreme circumstances and take in doctrine in order to drive out evil from our thinking and by this means ultimately reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- I. In order to make advance in the Spiritual Life we need faithfulness and this is anyone who consistently comes to bible class without missing any great amount of bible study.
1. The col at this point indicated you are allowed a leave of Absence of exactly 7 days in 1 year.
 - i. It was a GREAT JOKE and was indicated that you had to plan your illnesses around this schedule.
 - ii. The point is that for all believers who desire to advance in the Spiritual Life there must be consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. If a person misses for whatever reason PENANCE is simple and they must listen to 25 lessons per day for every day of absence.
 - iv. Another JOKE.....
 - v. Consistency is what really causes spiritual growth.
 - vi. You can grow by coming only on Sunday to bible class provided that you LIVE for 375 years and only miss 2 Sundays per year.
 - vii. The obvious conclusions are:
 - a. Whoever your right Pastor Teacher is he must teach more than 3x per week and it is minimally essential for him to teach at least 4x per week to allow the congregation any opportunity to advance.

- b. We have been and are still in very desperate times in this nation and in the whole world and the only solution is Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - c. We are headed for an incredible disaster in the nation and world as well and it would be very embarrassing to be caught in any national or world disaster and not be in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and not be in that Status Quo for quite some time when it comes.
 - d. We have been and are still MOVING toward a very terrible situation and it is more rapidly occurring today than ever before.
 - e. WE are either going to disappear as a nation or we can survive and it will go either way.
 - 2. It is essential for everyone who is going to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to be fanatically consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine if we are going to have enough members in the pivot in Super Grace Status Quo to survive as a nation.
 - i. We were in desperate need in the 70s, and 80s of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and there seems to have been an incredible growth in that period of believer who have reached Status Quo Super Grace but who are now, in our time today rapidly leaving to be with the Lord with very few replacements occurring.
 - 3. By being consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception we receive a deposit in the soul and this is there to bear interest.
 - i. Our interest from this deposit is blessing from God and once our deposit is large enough God starts to POUR blessings into our account in 5 categories MINIMUM.
 - ii. In addition we have the blessings of giving comfort to others and of being the indirect source of blessings for those we leave behind when we DIE in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - iii. This is part of dying grace to know that God will take care of and bless based on your level of spiritual growth those loved ones and friends which we leave behind.
- J. It takes something to be persistent, it requires guts a determined volition to be consistent and avoid any and all distractions to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. These are the ones who realize that whatever they miss by attending bible study is acceptable.
 - 2. Faithfulness in attending bible study is what is required to be able to make advance in the Spiritual Life.
 - 3. Constant study and discipline in the intake of Bible Doctrine is what is essential for being able to communicate Bible Doctrine to a congregation as a Pastor Teacher.
 - 4. It is the CONTENT which counts and how you get it out to the congregation is of no consequence
- K. Qualifications to become a Pastor Teacher include:
 - 1. Male believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God received from the sovereignty of God the Holy Spirit the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher.
 - 2. Must be under strict academic discipline as a member of a local church ministry where Bible Doctrine is constantly taught with enough growth to recognize the possession of this spiritual gift.
 - 3. Being consistent in academic discipline resulting in spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace by intensification of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception..

4. Engaging in whatever academic or other training or experience the Lord provides by preparation and seasoning for the ministry.
 - i. College and graduate school is the most common way but the Lord may lead a man in different ways for qualification for the ministry.
 - ii. This should in the best case involve the Pastor Teacher getting a thorough education in the biblical languages
5. Must have strong disciplinary training from some system.
 - i. Military service
 - ii. Some system with strict and hopefully unfair use of authority and discipline.
 - a. You never understand authority and how to use it until it is above you and is unfair, brutal, obviously prejudiced against you, etc.
 - b. This is needed for the Pastor Teacher because if any man gets behind the pulpit without having gone through any system of grossly unfair discipline he will not be qualified to handle the authority God gives to the Pastor Teacher.
 - c. No one can handle authority until he has been under both properly and improperly used authority.
 - d. This will allow him to understand how to properly use authority and this is essential because the authority given to the Pastor Teacher by God is the highest authority in life and if a Pastor Teacher abuses this authority in any way is a disaster for both him and his congregation.
 - iii. The Pastor Teacher however MUST establish his authority by consistent teaching Bible Doctrine over a period of time and not try to exercise authority without establishing it based on the doctrine he has taught.
 - a. Consistent and proper teaching establishes authority of the Pastor Teacher and SETS policy based on GRACE.
 - iv. The Pastor Teacher must be the epitome of self discipline in all cases.
6. He must understand administration and delegation of authority.
 - i. The Pastor Teacher who tries to do it all himself is crazy and if he is not he will be shortly.
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher is not the one to open the church, unlock the doors, watch the nursery, call on the people etc.
 - iii. There must be an understanding of administrative authority delegation.
 - iv. ABOVE ALL the Pastor Teacher never touches the MONEY in the church there are gifted men who are qualified to do this and should do it.
7. He must have enough leadership ability to NOT abuse the tremendous authority vested by God in the Pastor Teacher of a local church.
 - i. Good Leadership ability will keep the Pastor Teacher from both arrogance and abuse of power.
 - ii. This is an occupational hazard for the ministry.
8. He must have moral courage to make decisions compatible with Bible Doctrine
 - i. He is responsible to God for his policy, decisions, teaching and Modus Operandi.
9. He must understand that his primary function is to study and teach and therefore must never be side tracked from this objective by calling on, visiting sick, counseling, catering to idiots in the congregation who demand time and attention.
 - i. If a person is not under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine roll them out
 - ii. As long as a person is not disturbing anyone they can be left alone and might just become positive to Bible Doctrine at some point.
- L. Under any given pastor teacher a Congregation should never be victimized for emotional pleas for full time christian service.
 1. People “come forward” for full time christian service without any growth or qualification and the whole process is a HOAX since all believers from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are in full time Christian service.
 - i. No matter what you do in life you are in FULL TIME Christian service.

- M. In the local church there must be ONE person teaching in a group under strict academic discipline one person talking in authority.
1. This is the only way for a believer to learn Bible Doctrine and grow in the Spiritual Life.
 2. The Pastor Teacher in teaching has a result of spiritual growth and his congregation reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with the result of them receiving Super Grace blessings in time and glorification of God.
 3. **EVERYONE need remember that the ULTIMATE Goal of every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is to move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or spiritual infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace Status Quo in order that GOD CAN BLESS HIM IN TIME.**
- N. The Pastor Teacher must learn Bible Doctrine but GOD WILL PROVIDE THE HEARERS OF HIS TEACHING OF DOCTRINE.
1. All the Pastor Teacher has to do is be prepared and sit down in one place and God will provide the hearers.
 2. A prepared pastor will always be provided hearers it may be 2 or 3 or 2 or 3 thousand and God will provide them and he does not hustle up a congregation to hear what he is teaching.
 3. He does not invite people to come nor try to find gimmicks to attract people to the local church.
 4. Therefore the Pastor Teacher must learn Bible Doctrine but must also remember that God uses prepared men.
 5. GOD provides the hearers WHEN THE PASTOR IS PREPARED.
- O. God provides for perpetuation of the spiritual heritage in the Church Age for every generation through the function of the Pastor Teacher in the assembly of the local church.
1. There is no perpetuation of the spiritual heritage without Pastor Teachers and there is no authorization of any organization outside the local church nor any substitute for the local church in the Church Age.
 2. The apostasy of some local churches and moral cowardice in the form of denominations does not justify the rise of the independent movement and both are out of line with the organizational structure set out in the word of God.
 3. All the independent organizations and denominations are out of line and the local church is the only authorized system for dissemination of Bible Doctrine to the congregation.
 4. No matter the organization, its system and background, those who become too involved in these things CANNOT and will not grow in the Spiritual Life because they must be in a local church and under the strict academic discipline and the authority of a Pastor Teacher.
 5. Doctrine does the choosing of the one who is to teach with the gift of Pastor Teacher and doctrine also provides the spiritual growth of the one taking in Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 6. Eventually people will emerge with certain spiritual gifts and the ability and qualifications to use those gifts in a congregation.
- P. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God carries himself, his loved ones, his neighborhood, city, county, state, nation and his generation historically.
- Q. The analogy in v2 is to banking and the deposit of Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer is the means of paying dividends or interest in the form of blessing to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and he in turn gives great blessing to his contemporaries and historically.
1. This deposit produces therefore, interest, gain, represents security and every deposit of Bible Doctrine produces that which is needed to turn history around in our generation.

2Tim 2:2

v2: and what things or Bible Doctrine teachings which you have heard, from use of Positive Volition under the Grace Apparatus for Perception authority and with concentration, specifically in seminary, from the immediate source of me, Paul, along with or in the presence of many qualified legitimate judicial witnesses or other theological students who function by

learning, the same things or those principles of Bible Doctrine you deposit these doctrines with faithful Men with the gift of Pastor Teacher and all Positive Volition Believers, certain of whom, who are consistent, who by their very nature as potential pastors, shall be able or qualified to individually publicly teach under a system of academic discipline others believers also, as Pastor Teachers.

Lesson #28 Series # 469 2Tim 2:3

- I. Formation of a nation:
 - A. When any nation is being formed under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment it means many great things:
 1. Great nobility of character
 - B. When any nation is on the decline the people fall apart and reject the Laws of Divine Establishment function.
 - C. The Price they Paid: A historical resume of the signers of the United States of America Declaration of Independence
 1. 5 were captured by British and tortured before they died
 2. 12 had their homes ransacked and burned
 3. 2 lost sons in the continental army
 4. 1 had 2 sons captured
 5. 9 of the 56 fought and died from wounds or hardships of that war for independence
 6. 24 were lawyers and jurists
 7. 11 were merchants
 8. 9 were farmers and plantation owners
 9. All were men of means and well educated.
 10. They all signed knowing that if captured they would die.
 11. They pledged their lives, fortunes and sacred honor in signing
 12. Carter Braxton a wealthy plantation owner had his ships swept from the sea by the British navy.
 - i. He had to sell his home and properties to pay his debts and died in rags.
 13. Thomas McCain was so hounded by the British he was forced to move his family constantly.
 - i. **HE SERVED IN CONGRESS WITHOUT PAY**
 - ii. His family was kept in hiding
 - iii. His possessions were taken from him
 - iv. Poverty was his reward.
 14. Vandals or soldiers looted the properties of
 - i. Elry
 - ii. Clymer
 - iii. Paul
 - iv. Walton'
 - v. Rennette
 - vi. Hayward
 - vii. Rutledge
 - viii. Middleton
 15. At the battle of Yorktown, Thomas Nelson Jr noted that Cornwallis had taken over his home for his Headquarters.
 - i. The Owner quietly urged George Washington to open fire and his home destroyed and Nelson died bankrupt.
 16. Francis Lewis had his home and properties destroyed
 - i. His wife was jailed and died within a few months
 17. John Hart was driven from his dying wife's bedside
 - i. Their 13 children fled for their lives and his fields and gristmill were laid waste.
 - ii. For more than a year he lived in forests and caves and after the war returning home he found his wife dead and his children all had disappeared.
 - iii. A few weeks later he died from Exhaustion

18. Norris and Livingston suffered similar fates.
 - D. These were not wild eyed rabble rousing ruffians but were soft spoken men of superior education and they had security but VALUED LIBERTY MORE.
 1. They pledged all they had firmly relying on the protections of divine providence.
- II. This passage starts with 2 analogies to discipline
- A. v1 the analogy to the student teaching Grace Discipline
 - B. v2 the analogy to banking teaching Academic Discipline
 - C. v3-4 the analogy to the military teaching Self Discipline
 - D. Passing the Colors or leadership for the Church
 1. Timothy is now receiving the “Colors” of leadership for the next generation in the Church Age.
 - i. Timothy will produce the action here by becoming a spiritual atlas and carry his generation.
 - ii. Paul recognizes Timothy as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 2. Paul is about to die and wants Timothy to take over leadership and “Carry the Colors” with him for a short time and then take on the leadership of the church.
 3. All believers are Royal Family of God and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is battlefield royalty.
 - E. Paul used many military metaphors since he lived with the roman army and there was never a time in his whole life when he did not have great contact with roman army personnel.
 1. He lived literally with roman officers and soldiers during imprisonments
 2. He was escorted by roman detachments going to Rome for imprisonment.
 3. He was apprehended before he was executed by roman officers soldiers.
 4. He was incarcerated in his first imprisonment with the praetorian guard.
 - F. Rome in this century of the writing of the epistles was very particular about its recruiting of soldiers.
 1. One of the signs of degeneration of a nation is when it will not use its best men for military service.
 - i. If there is anything which makes the best quality type person into a better person is to have military service.
 - ii. Great care was exercised when Rome chose recruits for the military.
 2. Paul had all this in mind in writing this passage.
 3. The concept behind Paul asking or telling Timothy to carry the colors and campaign with HIM speaks of Quality in his choice.
 4. Before a soldier received his mark of entrance into the military he had to be tested to determine his ability in many areas and whether he had the requisite HONOR, Bravery and Courage to serve for Rome.
 5. Paul recognized that He himself had been recruited by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and bore the mark of salvation and he uses this analogy of this Brand or mark as indicative of the fact that he had been recruited and chosen by God for a purpose.
 6. As Royal Family of God in this Church Age we, each of us, carry this mark.
 7. Paul later in life said that he felt that this mark should be related to the pressure, suffering and testing which comes with a positive attitude toward Bible Doctrine. **Gal 6:17**
 8. The first thing every roman recruit had to understand was Discipline and Courage. **1Cor 15:23, Col 2:5, 1Thes 5:13,**
 - i. One of the signs that men were ready to take on the difficult training of the roman army was their assimilating of its discipline brought out by DRILLING.
 - ii. One way to determine if a man is mentally and morally fit to serve as a soldier was to determine if he had discipline needed to march in step and execute instantly commands needed and was qualified.
 9. Our Battalion as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is composed of 4 companies:
 - i. Alpha is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and he has already passed the reviewing stand.

- ii. Bravo is the Church
 - iii. Charlie is the Old Testament Scripture believers
 - iv. Delta is the millennial believers and martyrs.
10. One of the first signs of reversionism in the Royal Family of God is discussed in **1Thes 5:13** as the believer who is OUT OF STEP, a military analogy to not being able to properly execute marching drills.
 11. Paul encourages the believer to NOT walk in God the Holy Spirit but MARCH for by walking you will be out of step and marching gives the self discipline which must go with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. **Gal 5:15**
 - i. By this military analogy we can clearly see that ALL holy rollers and tongues movement believers are OUT OF STEP therefore in reversionism without any self discipline.
 12. **Gal 1:6** shows us legalistic reversionism going AWOL from the principle of Grace.
 13. The concept of giving commands which are to be obeyed instantly and in battle were given by trumpet very often
 - i. “when the trumpet shall give an uncertain sound who shall prepare himself for battle”?
 - ii. This actually means that if you don’t know Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you have no idea what is going on.
 - iii. If you don’t know what is going on you are not with it and if you are not with it you are OUT OF IT and if you are out of it you are under some phase of Divine Discipline for reversionism.
 14. **Col 2:8** Paul warns the believer to never be captured and never will a believer be captured in the Angelic Conflict with Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 15. The triumphal Procession completed the victory celebration of war **2Cor 2:14-16** where the enemy was killed and the victors honored and is an analogy to Surpassing Grace blessings for the believer in eternity.
- G. Our passage is designed to bring out ONE THING and that is that YOU ARE NOTHING IN LIFE WITHOUT SELF DISCIPLINE
1. This principle belongs to the believer and unbeliever alike.
 2. We live under a principle called “FREEDOM” but it cannot be enjoyed if you do not have self discipline.
 3. BECAUSE Freedom does not belong only to YOU
 4. Freedom belongs to everyone and since all kinds of citizens have freedom it means that all Lawful citizens are entitled to freedom, privacy and property.
 5. Everyone has a right to this not just a few.
 - i. When only one is free that is dictatorship
 - ii. If everyone is free it is called Democracy to Republic.
 6. Since everyone has freedom the only way each can enjoy his own freedom and his own privacy and maintain his own property is based on self discipline.
 7. FREEDOM NEVER WORKS WITHOUT SELF DISCIPLINE.
 8. The root of freedom is self discipline and all freedom comes through military victory.
 9. Military victory cannot be achieved apart from discipline.
 10. WE can all drive cars is because of discipline set up by certain Laws.
 11. Discipline is needed for everything in life.
 12. Even the poorest of military training today requires a degree of self discipline.
 - i. Between the toughest and weakest military training systems there is very little difference since ALL OF THEM require self discipline above all else.
 - ii. Anyone who wears a uniform of any service must go through a system of group and self discipline.
 - iii. All of our military services offer self and group discipline and something which you will be able to carry away from their training.

- iv. For this reason alone we should have universal military training so everyone can enjoy their freedoms.
- 13. What is true of life is true in an intensified way in the Christian Way of Life.
 - i. Fundamentalists are free to do whatever they want and make their own rules and set up their own system of legalism.
 - ii. We are born into this system where you can learn the easy way or the hard way.
 - iii. A smart person learns things in life the easy way
 - iv. A smart person listens instead of talking and concentrates and is free from subjectivity
 - v. Learning the smart way is the easy way and the objective way
 - vi. Being stupid is learning the hard way and being subjective
 - vii. This is true especially in the Christian Way of Life.
 - viii. Self discipline means doing bible study when something interesting is on the TV or some interesting thing is going on in your periphery.
 - ix. Self discipline means listening and concentrating and being under the ministry of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit when you don't like the subject, speaker, circumstances or anything else.
- 14. Most believers have failed to pick up on a VERY IMPORTANT principle
 - i. To be STUPID is to be under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.**
 - ii. This is to be negative under the system of the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.**
 - iii. Therefore being that you are going to learn the hard way God then says, "Alright, so you won't learn to Faith Rest in life then I will clobber you until you are down and out".**
 - iv. "Alright, so you won't respect the privacy of another individual, I will clobber you until you SHUT UP or bite your tongue off"**
 - v. "So you won't come to bible study then I will clobber you until you hurt so much you say, ' I hurt so much I think I will go to church'"**
 - a. This is Divine Discipline**
- 15. The Principle is that Growing believers are under their own self discipline.

III. V4

- A. When considering a soldier on active duty in the military serving in a theater of war in combat situations becomes involved with the activities of civilian life this is an analogy to the believer leaving the Christian Way of Life and entering reversionism.
 - 1. This is comparable to being under the influence of evil.
 - 2. Many soldiers have outside jobs when on Garrison duty and may serve as a bar tender or some other job they can work at night in order to make extra money.
 - 3. However when they move into the field under combat conditions and they face the enemy they are not still functioning in their outside job this is a conflict of interest.
- B. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and carries his generation or as Timothy becomes a spiritual leader as a Pastor Teacher perpetuates into that generation the spiritual heritage of Blessing.
 - 1. No person can have one foot in reversionism and the other in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God they are mutually exclusive.
 - 2. If this believer is involved in reversionism he is like a soldier in combat trying to do a civilian job at the same time.
 - 3. {(aside) the Col. Retired from the reserves when they offered him a Job and to make him a Brigadier General in charge of all the air components of the Army from Beaumont to Brownsville and he determined he would not have been able to continue to teach at Berachah and do it.}
 - 4. You cannot do a full time military job and civilian job at the same time.
 - 5. All reservists make sacrifices and will see that in higher rank jobs they are full time jobs.
 - 6. Civilian life is reversionism while campaigning in combat is Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace with your Super Grace blessings.

- C. This is a warning to Timothy to NEVER engage in reversionism for any reason for the rest of his life.
1. The whole of First Timothy was about his being in reversionism and Paul is telling him he cannot ever go back that way.
 2. Paul did the same thing in going to Jerusalem instead of Spain and he lost 4 years but in his recovery God turned his cursing to blessing and we have the 4 prison epistles.
 3. He did however recognize that he could not afford to ever go back into reversionism again.
 4. Paul is now dying as a believer in Ultra Super Grace and is passing a warning to Timothy to NEVER ever get into it again.
 5. This is a GREAT warning for each of us and we cannot afford to lose time in our life to foray into reversionism.
 6. In the times we live in today and for many many decades past you cannot afford any reversionistic flings in your life the times are to intense with problems.
- D. Carnality can be easily handled and done so very quickly with Rebound procedure because all sin was Judged on the cross.
1. However EVIL destroys having been rejected on the cross and in fact becoming involved in evil and moving into reversionism causes the believer to replace Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with EVIL from the policy and plan of Satan.
 2. In this way EVIL destroys your soul and what your thinking will be in reversionism.
 3. Evil was not handled at the cross and carnality has instant recovery potential but EVIL does not and there is not enough time in this life to switch between EVIL and DOCTRINE over and over and still contribute to supporting your generation and your nation.
 4. In effect Paul is saying if you are going to HOLD your ground in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and have your life count for something in the Angelic Conflict you cannot get into or back into reversionism and Evil.
 5. To avoid this regression requires SELF DISCIPLINE.
- E. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is a soldier under the command of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who continue under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and in possession of their Super Grace blessing package.
1. All reversionists have gone AWOL from the service of Christ while any soldier who remains in ranks in this combat is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 2. These believer STRIVE to Please their commanding officer who has chosen them to be a soldier.
 3. It was common up to our war between the states that this tradition continued.
 4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the one who enlisted all of us and the reversionist is AWOL while the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is in ranks.
- F. Principles:
1. Civilian life is analogous to reversionism and being under the influence of evil.
 2. The striving soldier is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace whose self discipline is involved in his maintaining Super Grace Status Quo.
 - i. There is a tendency to relax in bible studies once you receive some of the blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - ii. In this case the STRIVING soldier is the one in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace seeking to please his commanding officer Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - iii. He does so in maintaining Super Grace Status Quo and this requires the same self discipline that takes the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iv. You cannot never get away from self discipline until you die if you want to go anywhere.

- v. Self Discipline is as much a part of your soul function as food is a part of your body's function.
 - vi. Self discipline is the KEY to life and the sloppy people without self discipline are the ones who never make in anywhere in life and these are the reversionists and unbelievers.
3. **These are those people who allow themselves to get fat and sloppy and they have no self discipline with regard to eating habits nor with regard to exercise.**
- i. Then later in life when he needs his body it cannot carry him in what he needs at that time.
 - a. You cannot even enjoy parties or social life without self discipline.
 - ii. Our prosperity in this nation with regard to business came from GREAT self discipline on the part of MANAGEMENT.
 - a. When Labor had self discipline they did not need labor unions and produced fantastic work.
 - b. A great organization of any kind runs on the self discipline of its constituents.
4. No person can supervise you all the time but you supervise self with self discipline.
- i. A person who does a good job on the job supervises himself while everyone else is gold bricking wasting time.
 - a. Self discipline means disciplining self, doing a good job, conscientious on the job, learn your job well and DO YOUR JOB AS UNTO THE LORD.
 - b. If you do your job as unto the Lord it is inevitable that you will have self discipline.
 - c. The only danger in self discipline is INFLEXIBILITY but Bible Doctrine will take care of this.
 - d. Self Discipline can make a person inflexible and destroy their sense of humor and this is the GREAT danger of it.
5. WE must regulate our own life and discipline our own life else someone else will do it for us.
- i. We see this in a kid who has not been taught self discipline in the home goes out into the world at some point and gets involved with other kids who are involved in some form of dope or MJ and this ends up with hard narcotic drug abuse; HE HAS NO SELF DISCIPLINE.
 - a. He cannot regulate his own life and cannot say NO when he should and this lack of self regulation makes it easy to become lawless and this leads him to drug abuse of all kinds.
 - b. As a result of not regulating his own life society will regulate it for him and by LAW he will be apprehended and jailed and have sorrow and misery.
 - c. A person who does not regulate his own life in this way and gets into drug abuse cannot now regulate his own life as the drugs take away his volition to do so.
 - d. This person is then totally miserable and has made his own misery by NOT regulating his own life.
 - ii. Now a kid who grows up in a home where he is taught self discipline and trained and inculcated in principles of self discipline
 - a. You cannot spoil this child in any way since they have enough self discipline to regulate self in all situations.
 - b. The people who are spoiled in life are those who are given everything EXCEPT the training in self discipline.
 - c. If you regulate your own life you have infinite capacity to receive things.
 - d. As long as you train a child in self discipline and he will regulate his own life in self discipline there is no limit to what you can give them without ever harming them.

6. This is what being in Super Grace and receiving unimaginable Super Grace blessings in 5 categories.
 - i. You regulate your own life by daily consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit and GOD CANNOT SPOIL YOU.
 - a. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is a believer who regulates his own life over a long period of time to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God; THIS IS SELF DISCIPLINE.
 - b. You cannot spoil in any way a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and can give them anything and everything and this will never spoil them.
 - c. They have regulated their own lives from their own self discipline and from this self regulation comes capacity for all aspects of LIFE.
 - i) Love, life, blessing HONOR, INTEGRITY
 - ii) and you cannot spoil this kind of person.
 - ii. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace carries his own generation and this is why he is portrayed as ATLAS holding up his generation in history.
 - a. This believer did not start out by holding up his generation but by picking up a little here and a little there in bible study of the principles of Bible Doctrine.
 - b. Eventually he then holds up his generation with his accumulated doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - c. This requires proper and effective training on the part of the individual believer.
 - d. This takes SELF DISCIPLINE and putting up with a lot of ridicule.
 - e. You will strive to please the one who enlisted you, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. Then those who are associated with the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace are blessed by this association.
 - a. By this means you bless those in your periphery as well.
 7. You can spoil a reversionist in a second and if you give them a smile or complement them they are instantly spoiled because they cannot do not and will not regulate their lives but allow Satan to regulate their lives.
 - i. The INFLUENCE of EVIL on a believer who is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine is that believer allowing SATAN to regulate their lives.
- G. This verse is in effect Paul passing the colors or the leadership of the church to Timothy in the next generation.

2Tim 2:3

v3: {Timothy} Bear or Endure or share hardships or carry the colors or campaign with or suffer EVIL with me as an honorable soldier of Christ Jesus.

2Tim 2:4

v4: No one male or female, when serving as a soldier on activity duty in a military combat campaign such as the Angelic Conflict becomes entangled and implicated in the business, occupations, transactions, activities and functions of the civilian pattern of life {analogy to reversionism under the influence of evil} in order that he may strive to serve and please the one who has called, recruited, mustered and activated him, his commanding officer, here Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Lesson #29 Series # 469 2Tim 2:5

- I. Good article on Economics and the failure of Paper Money which is not backed by anything and this is our current standard.
 - A. Nixon deficit in 5 years in office was 68 BILLION dollars
 - B. Ford in 1 Year in office exceeded Nixon's and the deficit of WWII.
 - C. {At one point Clinton's deficit was 1.5 trillion
 - D. Today it is estimated we have a deficit of a MINIMUM of 21 Trillion Dollars

1. 1 trillion is 1000 billion. WE ARE BASICALLY SCREWED AND OUR DOLLAR IS APPROACHING THE WORTH OF THE ORIGINAL CONTINENTAL DOLLAR WHICH ENDED AT 1/10 OF 1 CENT.} (ff)

E. In 1976 the government had not cleared enough in the prior year to pay the INTEREST on its obligations but they never stopped PRINTING MONEY.

1. We have seen other countries in our time whose economies failed reach levels of 1500 to 3000% inflation. (ff)

F. We must return to a gold standard to restrain congress from spending and NO nation on the gold standard has ever suffered disastrous inflation and no nation NOT on a gold standard has ever avoided it.

G. The secret to success in economy is some standard backing currency and to allow corporations free run to expand to whatever limits they can reach.

II. Analogies to Discipline

A. v1 The student teaching us GRACE discipline

B. v2 Banking teaching us academic discipline

C. v3-4 Military teaching us self discipline

D. v5 Athletic Games teaching us the blessing and reward of discipline.

III. Athletics teaching blessing and reward of discipline:

A. **Are you interested in Bible Doctrine because it is the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ or because it means promotion, success, wealth, power, prosperity, ETC.**

B. **OR are you NORMAL interested for BOTH reasons?**

C. At this time the Romans had restored the "Olympic" games of various kinds.

1. Romans were very strong, very organized, very disciplined but lacked the agility to be great athletes.

2. They did however loved great athletic performance and over time as peoples moved into the empire and intermarried with Romans they developed into some of the greatest athletes of all time.

D. There were 2 kinds of established athletes in the day this was written.

1. The Serious one who went to the Gymnasium which was like a castle with great fields and court yards and living apartments where athletes lived for 10 months and was surrounded by very high walls.

2. The other not so serious who went to a Gymnasium which was not like the above subsidized gym like a YMCA or Health Club today, where you could check in for a couple of hours and exercise and come back when you were able but not a really serious thing like the first kind.

3. The serious athlete is compared to the believer who is and remains consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.

4. The not so serious athlete is compared to the believer who is indifferent to Bible Doctrine and will eventually move into some phase of reversionism.

E. (gr) Stephanos == winners wreath of the Warrior or Athlete who was successful in his campaign or event in the Games.

1. There was no such thing as 2nd place or 3rd place in any of the Games and you either Got a winners wreath or NOT.

2. This is the way life should be viewed and there is no such thing as 2nd place in life and 2nd place was originated as a liberal, jackass, soft, weak idea which started with Modern Track Events and today in many cases in teaching in the area of athletics there is NO SUCH THING AS A LOSER AND EVERYONE GETS A TROPHY.

i. This is idiotic and this is the way Liberals Think.

ii. This is the WELFARE STATE function.

3. In order for an athlete to receive a Winners Wreath in the competition of the Games he must TRAIN and then COMPETE according to the rules under daily strict self discipline over the period of 10 months being restricted in the Gymnasium facility.

4. This is the same effort it takes the believer to move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

5. It takes Daily Self Discipline to move from salvation to maturity.
6. Either the Believer must regulate his own life or God will regulate it for him so that the believer will either receive from self discipline blessing in time or from lack of self discipline Divine Discipline and misery in time.
7. If the athlete violated 1 of many many laws and rules set up to regulate the Games you could not even compete let alone win a winners wreath.
 - i. It would be wonderful for Liberals to NOT control this country and just in the area of athletics they could not play or compete if they violated any of the rules.
 - a. They used to have a curfew of 11:00 and if you were in late you could not play.
 - b. No alcoholic drinks at all.
 - c. Absolute good grooming, shaving and hair length restrictions.
 - d. Dressing with Coat & Tie as a professional men.
 - ii. There was a Dress Code in Rome
 - iii. Being winners meant more than just being first in the event you were in.
 - iv. It was focused on the 10 months prior to the competition which was spent in self discipline.
 - v. The athlete produced for 10 long hard months self discipline and if he violated even a simple rule he was unable to compete.
 - vi. ONE single slip of the rules meant no competition.
8. These rules were not impossible but they simply required a constant gutty self discipline and self regulation of your life and show us a perfect analogy of the self discipline needed to move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
9. The competition was not going out and getting into the event and competing but included daily self and group discipline.

F. Summary of the RULES taken from the ancient world.

1. Matriculation Entrance into the Gymnasium
 - i. You signed up and had to bring something to prove you were a CITIZEN in order to be able to compete.
 - a. The PRINCIPLE IS: If you are an unbeliever you cannot go to Super Grace and cannot benefit from the Super Grace blessings.
 - ii. This is analogous to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and if you have not believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ then you are not in the Plan of God.
 - iii. The Plan of God is analogous to the 10 months of self discipline.
2. The athlete must live in the Gymnasium for 10 months and he was not permitted to go outside the Gym for ANY reason.
 - i. This is analogous to the basic principle of Christian self discipline which includes:
 - a. Rebound is essential for self regulation of your life and must occur when sin occurs.
 - b. Separation is essential for your self regulation of your life and you must know what kind of person you must avoid especially other believers.
 - i) Most cases of separation deal with believers who are going in the wrong direction in their Spiritual Life.
 - ii. WE must recognize that the thing we do or at least should be doing in our Spiritual Life consistently is REBOUND for we SIN EVERY DAY.
 - a. The only thing which occurs or may occur as you move to and enter Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is that your sins will become a bit more refined but don't count on that.
 - b. Look at David with Bathsheba and Uriah he was in super grace Status Quo when it began and when it ended and the only difference throughout the whole thing was that he was a Carnal Super Grace believer when involved in the thing.

- c. Then he used the rebound procedure and was still a super grace believer and NEVER neglected Bible Doctrine.
 - d. David was kind of an exception in that he never got too refined in his sins but was KILLING people later in life.
 - e. Remember that NO Christian EVER stops sinning as long as he is alive.
 - f. No matter how rarefied the atmosphere of Super Grace is **YOU WILL SIN UNTIL THE DAY YOU DIE AND THAT WILL BE THE LAST DAY OF YOUR SIN.**
 - g. If you intend to regulate your life YOU MUST REBOUND.
 - iii. In addition people always influence YOU most often adversely and therefore you must AVOID the people who keep you from bible study for any reason.
 - a. Most of these are Christians.
 - b. **Whoever it is who pulls you in the wrong direction is OUT OF LINE in the Spiritual Life and MUST BE AVOIDED!**
 - c. There is a restriction with regard to distractions in bible study whether in class or at your own desk and NOTHING should be allowed to distract you during study as this is Self and Group Discipline and STRICT academic discipline and essential for you to regulate your life.
 - d. Whether interested in the subject or NOT you do not talk or write to one another and even if you get mad about something you must rebound and return to strict concentration.
 - iv. This is also analogous to entrance into one's local church under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
3. You had to answer all trumpet calls:
- i. Warning Calls to go out on the Field 4-5 times per day
 - a. During this call you removed your clothing and went to your training table and trainer.
 - b. The Trainer rubbed your body down completely with OIL
 - c. This is analogous to rebound
 - ii. Assembly Calls for the Field where you moved into your spot in line for the roll call.
 - a. You had to be on the field and in place when the trumpet blew and if you were not you were disqualified and dismissed and expelled from the gym and could not compete in the games no matter how great you might have been.
 - b. ROME SAID THAT IF AN ATHLETE DOES NOT HAVE SELF DISCIPLINE HE IS REALLY NOT AN ATHLETE AND IS JUST A TALENTED JACKASS.
 - c. We have not true athletes and not really dedicated athletes who have a proper attitude or self regulation and self discipline.
 - d. Some sports do not require self regulation simply talent and if you are talented you can get away without the self discipline and this is a real tragedy.
 - e. The tragedy is that without the self discipline these people do not gain capacity for all categories of life.
 - iii. Warning Calls for meals
 - iv. Assembly Calls for meals
 - v. These are analogous to consistent Positive Volition and personal self discipline.
 - a. This means that your Positive Volition must be CONSISTENT and even if a believer is sincere about Bible Doctrine but not consistent he will not grow since sincerity cannot regulate a life only self discipline can regulate your life.
 - b. Sincerity is totally out of line with regard to self discipline and it is only volition which counts.

- c. The angels watched 2 people in the garden and were not even remotely interested in physical death and Death held no interest for them.
- d. The angels watching Adam and Ishah were only interested to see if they would use their volition and obey or Disobey.
- e. The angels were only interested in the SPIRITUAL DEATH of Adam and the woman for the wages of Disobedience or SIN is Spiritual Death.
- f. On the cross when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was on the cross the angels were not interested in his physical death but ONLY his spiritual death.
- g. It was the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ bearing our sins which resolved the Angelic Conflict.
- vi. This same issue applies to each of us.
 - a. If we are only interested in our emotion and being sincere and feeling good we are totally disoriented to reality in the Spiritual Life.
 - b. We must come to the point of knowing that there is a decision which must be made no matter how you feel you make it.
 - c. YOU MUST REGULATE YOUR OWN LIFE OR THE LORD WILL DO IT FOR YOU AND THIS WILL **HURT**
 - d. Whom the Lord loves he chastens and skins alive with a whip.
 - e. It is SELF discipline vs Divine Discipline and we have a choice and have one every day.
 - f. There is testing every day.
 - g. **THE CHOICE IS NO GOOD IF IT BECOMES ROUTINE**
 - h. WE get from God testing constantly every day according to the level of Bible Doctrine we have accumulated.
- vii. These athletes were GREAT people and had great souls in their great bodies
 - a. They had incredible self discipline and went through a system of self discipline which no one else in the roman empire would even try.
 - b. They made daily consistent decisions to enter, stay and function in the gymnasium properly for 10 months and these were the thousands of decisions.
- viii. What makes a believer great is gutting it out, making consistent decisions no matter what distractions occur to engage in daily bible study.
- ix. Immediately after roll call they did not break up and practice for their individual event.
 - a. They all did exactly the same thing every day.
 - b. The first did some muscle exercises no matter the event.
 - c. Each exercise had to be done exactly correct and if there was a fault seen that athlete was disqualified and dismissed.
 - d. Most of the time was spent in doing things in a group and then a small time was allowed for working on the particular event a person was involved in.
 - e. Out of the 4 times of assembly 3 of them were involved in group exercise and running, jogging, sprinting etc and only 1 time during the day were they working on their own event.
- 4. The athlete must exercise in all kinds of WEATHER.
 - i. This is the stability of self discipline and Positive Volition.
 - ii. Whether it was HOT or COLD, raining or snowing the athlete came out for the day's activities in the same uniform, total nakedness.
 - iii. The body was anointed with oil which was mixed with fine African sand and rubbed that into your body.
 - iv. This was very unreasonable but this is the beauty of understanding and using self discipline to regulate your life.

- v. LIFE is unreasonable in many areas situations, and people and these all seem to have the authority over you.
 - vi. This is GOOD and You never should look for a fair deal in life and never expect it for you get your fair deal FROM GOD in the Grace Plan of God
 - vii. How the world treats you is of no consequence and greater is he in you than he in the world.
 - viii. No believer reaches Super Grace without consistent self discipline and consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
5. The athlete must have NO contact with the opposite sex during the 10 months of training.
- i. This means no talking to women or having them on the premises.
 - ii. This is analogous to distractions to bible study
 - iii. There are innumerable distractions which can potentially keep you from bible study.
 - iv. Many are pleasant distractions and highly desirable but HIGHLY incompatible with the rules.
 - v. Many of the rules are unfair and unreasonable but being a rule it is good as a challenge to self discipline.
 - vi. The point of these rules made by the Romans was that if the athlete could regulate his own life under these rules for 10 months he could go anywhere in the empire and do well.
 - vii. Athletics was were they got their greatest business men and general officers and knights in the government because a person who could regulate his life for 10 months under unjust and unfair rules is a man who can go somewhere in life.
 - viii. Whether you won in the games or not you could count on getting a GOOD job anywhere in Rome.
 - ix. This was a GREAT SYSTEM.
6. Part of the training was dietary in nature:
- i. You had to abstain from rich foods, confections, wine, any kind of alcohol, and the athlete was on a RULE diet.
 - ii. He was allowed Wheat, Cheese, Lean Meat, FIGS, NO SWEETS, nothing else.
 - iii. This emphasizes objectivity in LEARNING in which your preconceived ideas are set aside.
 - iv. Everyone who ever walked into Berachah had preconceived ideas which did not comply with Bible Doctrine.
 - v. This again is self regulation and the self discipline needed to set aside inculcated preconceived notions and receive what the word of God has to say.
 - vi. This is what is essential for setting aside Human Viewpoint and satanic doctrine of evil and replacing it with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - vii. This emphasizes objectivity in learning Bible Doctrine in which preconceived ideas are set aside when they conflict with the Bible Doctrine being taught.
 - viii. This is regulation of life and this consistent self discipline and self regulation from Positive Volition life is regulated to accept the authority and teaching of someone else and if the self discipline is good you avoid the greatest trap of all that being competition with the Pastor Teacher.
 - ix. This would be the arrogance, jealousy and pride of the believe who sets self up to judge what is being taught and who is teaching
 - x. This kind of competition is what keeps a believer from advancing.
 - xi. This believer gets close to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then thinking they know it all or at least more than the Pastor Teacher fall right back down.
 - xii. These believer are jealous, petty, arrogant asses and the believer cannot compete with a properly prepared Bible Doctrine HE IS OVER THEM IN THE local church.

- xiii. When there is enough self discipline to pay attention to what is taught and accept it and ignore anything which makes one want to compete then they are moving constantly ahead.
 - xiv. Competing with the Pastor Teacher puts the believer out of the race to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
7. Therefore trainee must obey every other law or rule or policy of the (gr) gymnasiarchos the ruler of the gym.
- i. This was one of the highest systems of authority in the roman empire.
 - ii. He was the commandant of the gymnasium and had rank equivalent to a full general and wore a purple robe and white sandals as a badge of authority in the empire.
 - iii. During the course of the empire everyone wanted this Job and the greatest generals, knights and senators tried to get this job and there were only about 10 in the empire.
 - iv. It was considered the most honorable function in the empire and had great pay and greater responsibility as the Gym was the training ground for future great men in every branch of life.
 - v. This is comparable to the Pastor Teacher in the local church who is given the greatest authority over his own local church.
 - vi. It is inevitable that his constant study of Bible Doctrine will produce doctrinally oriented policy.
 - vii. This rule therefore says that any additional policy not proscribed by the roman senate could be made by the one who ruled the gym and it also must be obeyed implicitly.
- G. There were 2 categories of athletes again.
- 1. The Serious Ones (gr) Athletai who went to the gym for 10 months and represents the quintessence of self discipline, a recognition of authority and therefore had the ability to exercise great authority and was a future great in the empire
 - 2. The NOT so SERIOUS one (gr) Agonistai who was the person merely trying to stay in shape and was the amateur who was just in it for health and is comparable to the believer with Negative Volition and is under no system of discipline for a prolonged period of time.
 - i. He is the one who occasionally came to the gym and like the inconsistent believer who does not take in doctrine daily he will be in AGONY from his inconsistency.

2Tim 2:5

v5: **NOW; are you interested in Bible Doctrine or just what it can give you!; IF, anyone, Believers serious about Bible Doctrine with great self discipline and doctrine as Priority #1, {sarcastic} REALLY! competes in the athletic games, maybe he will, maybe he won't, he does not receive a winner's wreath or crown unless he trains and competes according to the laws & rules.**

Lesson #30 Series # 469 2Tim 2:6

- I. The Analogy to Production:
 - A. Principles:
 - 1. The games were always held in a stadium and this is comparable to Phase II or the life of the Royal Family of God on earth.
 - 2. Training for the games was always held in a Gymnasium and the athlete did not leave for any reason for 10 months and this is comparable to the local church
 - 3. In the stadium certain events were held in competition viewed by the crowd:
 - i. (gr) DROMOS == the running events
 - ii. (gr) PALE == the wrestling events
 - a. The Looser usually had a few broken bones and lost some body function permanently.
 - iii. (gr) PUGME == the Boxing Events

- a. This was a serious event using OXHIDE gloves studded with pieces of Metal and the Looser usually died.
 - iv. (gr) PENTATHLON == getting the most points in 5 events:
 - a. Broad Jump
 - b. Foot Race
 - c. Discus
 - d. Javelin
 - e. Wrestling
 - v. (gr) PAGKRATION == was considered the greatest event and was combined wrestling and boxing which very few people who entered and survived.
 - vi. Chariot Racing was another event but was only for those who could afford the equipment as it was expensive.
 4. The Real secret to being a great athlete in this system was the ATTITUDE toward the Training not the event itself and it was the self discipline which was most important.
 5. These various events were analogous to the various areas of production available to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and there must be Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul prior to PRODUCTION in the Spiritual Life.
- B. The Profile of the Super Grace Believer:
1. Like the athlete who qualifies to compete in the games the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has followed the colors to the high ground through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception resulting in maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. He therefore is qualified to “compete” or for legitimate production in the Spiritual Life.
 2. Like the athlete who wins the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has his own Super Grace blessing package and this is comparable to receiving the Wreath or (gr) Stephanos on the victors stand.
 - i. It was a wreath of Leaves of some sort and nothing unusual and is what the believer receives as his blessing package in 5 categories.
 3. Once the winner athlete of any event left the place where the events were held and went back home to his home town 7 things happened to him:
 - i. He entered the city through a new cut hole in the wall of the city and when he had entered they sealed this hole and placed a bronze plaque over it indicating that only one man ever entered this way giving his name and what he won.
 - ii. He stepped from the wall to the best chariot for the city and had a victory parade going through all the streets of the city where he was cheered.
 - iii. He was presented a lifetime pass for all future games as a tablet made of Gold.
 - iv. He was presented a monetary reward equivalent to \$50-\$100,000.
 - v. A poet wrote an Ode to commemorate his event and it was put on a bronze plaque and put with his statue in the city square.
 - vi. A statue of the winner was erected in a proper place in the center of the city.
 - vii. His children were fed and educated at public expense
 - viii. He was exempted from all future taxation.
 4. These were the things he received when he went home.
 - i. These things are analogous to receiving surpassing grace blessings in eternity.
 - ii. All of this training and self discipline and decisions to continue to train and obey the trumpet calls and eat the same diet etc day in and day out and it reflects that SELF DISCIPLINE is the key to the Spiritual Life and the only way to grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is to have constant self discipline.
 - iii. The Wreath could never be compared to what the athlete was to receive when he went home and nothing can compare to what we will receive when we leave this life and go HOME and receive our surpassing grace blessings IF we have reached and held Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

C. Principle:

1. Either regulate your own life or GOD will do it for you.
 - i. If you regulate your own life you will end up under Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace blessing
 - ii. if God regulates your life for you, you will end up under Divine Discipline
 - iii. If you regulate your own life it means you have used self discipline and consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. If God regulates your life it means he had to discipline you as a reversionist.
2. Either YOU discipline yourself or God will discipline you.
 - i. This is handling the problem of Carnality and WE ARE ALL CARNAL.
 - a. The person who says in this life that he does not sin is a liar 1John 1:8
 - ii. We all sin and sin has with it proscribed Divine Discipline and we can instantly recover from this via the use of the rebound procedure and the Divine Discipline may continue or it may be abated or canceled.
 - iii. Reversionism is another story, and it is going through various stages which firms up the Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and receiving various stages of Divine Discipline in order to turn you back.
 - a. Warning
 - b. Intensive
 - c. Dying
 - iv. Recovery from reversionism is a very prolonged process since the believer in reversionism has accepted the EVIL policy and thinking of Satan and used this to remove the doctrinal thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from his soul.
 - v. This situation MUST be REVERSED in order to recover.
 - vi. Either you use rebound and persist in Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and are therefore making decisions and using self discipline and this self discipline means that you are regulating your own life under GRACE using grace factors and grace principles:
3. Either you learn the Easy Way or you learn the Hard Way.
 - i. The Easy way is to learn under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - ii. The Hard Way is going through reversionism and whatever Divine Discipline is needed to wake you up and turn you back to Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. As believers we will all learn in this life and you can learn God's way and get in it and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or you can learn that the Love of God is every extensive in the area of Divine Discipline.
 - iv. If someone tells you a stove is HOT and you should not touch it you can accept that information and learn from their instruction by self discipline and accept their authority and believe them and NOT touch it and this is learning the EASY WAY
 - v. OR if you are like so many people you have to experience it yourself so you put your hand down on the Hot stove and get burned and this is the HARD WAY.
 - vi. You can learn by happiness or by HURTING and Daily you make this choice.
 - vii. When you neglect Bible Doctrine you are choosing to LEARN by HURTING.
4. The Easy way to learn is under the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
5. The Hard Way is to function under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine resulting in reversionism and a life of various stages of Divine Discipline.

D. Summary of v5:

1. The athlete is in the gymnasiums and in the Stadiums
 - i. 10 months were spent in an official gymnasium
 - ii. 1 Week approximately was spent in the Stadium during the competition.
 - iii. All this time he is under the authority of the Gymnasiarch and under him are a group of Marshals called Judges
 - iv. The athlete is the low man on the totem pole.

- v. At the top of the authority structure is the Gumnasiarch with total authority and under him are the Judges with administrative authority
 - vi. Then under these are the maintenance people with limited authority.
 - vii. At the Bottom are the athletes with absolutely NO Authority.
2. This is what you as a believer are in the local church.
 3. In the whole concept of athletics even to this day the ATHLETE has NO AUTHORITY.
 - i. Today since professional athletes have now taken on authority and the ability to bargain in the contract system the quality of athletics has gone DOWN.
 - ii. The Nobility and Honor in Athletics is Disappearing and being supplanted by TALENT.
 - iii. Today there is always the MONEY factor and BARGAINING for Greater and greater fixed salaries and to get rid of any kind of system of RULES.
 - iv. Most professional teams from the 1970's have even lost their DRESS CODES.
 - v. Whenever athletes get authority they are then not worth a DAMN.
 - vi. It is a RARE thing for an athlete to be able to have and handle authority.
 - vii. When the athlete quits saying YES SIR to the coach he is not worth anything any more.
 - viii. The Romans had the correct idea and took national athletics and use it for training for our best executives and military leaders and national leaders.
 - ix. We take national athletics and make it a ground for training LOSERS and BUMS.
 - x. If you take away the candy from the athlete today and they would not know what to do for a living.
 - xi. {These facts were presented over 40 years ago and this was the status and trend and it is FAR FAR Worse today}
 4. In Rome the athlete was an honorable person once he completed the system but while in the system he was NOTHING and was orders to everyone and had to recognize the authority of the Maintenance People and Judges and Gumnasiarch and this is how great nations and people are made.
 - i. This is how greatness is accomplished spiritually as well.
- E. YOU MUST BE UNDER AUTHORITY ESPECIALLY THAT WHICH YOU CONSIDER TO BE UNFAIR AND UNJUST REQUIRES MAXIMUM SELF DISCIPLINE AND MAXIMUM SELF REGULATION.
1. The judges or marshals of the games had the responsibility of enforcing all discipline and rules of the games
 2. One (1) act of disobedience or of breaking the rules and you were totally disqualified instantly and there were many many ways for this to happen and many many rules.
 3. This was one of the best systems of disciplinary training which the world has ever known and it is tragic we cannot see the athletes which the Romans produced and they were the best in all history.
 4. This was because to the Romans you were nothing and could not ever be a public hero unless you have gone through the MOST STRINGENT system of discipline.
 5. All roman public heroes were DISCIPLINED people
 - i. Julius Caesar was an epileptic and this did not keep him from joining the army and he was one of the best swimmers in his day in Rome.
 - ii. A couple times his enemies tried to drown him but he could swim a mile with no effort.
 - iii. He was s disciplined person and he was a ATHLETE.
 - iv. He had a disciplined soul and could work for 18 hours in a day without whining about it.
 6. The Romans said that their empire had a great system and recognized certain categories as heroes such as
 - i. Soldiers who were well paid for their victories and valor
 - ii. Athletes
 - iii. Knights and Administrators

7. Every way which could make one a great hero was preceded by a system which involved such incredible discipline and which required great self discipline greater than the world had and has ever seen.
 - i. This is why so many of the heroes of the Roman Empire were so fantastic in all areas of their life because they knew how to use authority when they received it and had respect for authority which allowed them to be able to USE authority properly.
 - ii. This is the only way to be oriented to life or anything and had great capacity for life.
8. Today's modern person has no discipline in the home and if they get discipline anywhere it is a shock.
 - i. No discipline in the education system and that which ought and must be taught from kindergarten levels is NOT that is DISCIPLINE.
 - ii. Then if they get discipline in any area of life they cannot handle it and they have no capacity for life as seen in the culture which has developed in this nation.
 - iii. The Movies today are all about demonism, with bad acting, camera function, no plot, and bad everything and teach nothing but liberalism to the maximum.
 - iv. Music is jungle music and worse today even that that and has gone from the concepts of romance to that of violence and destruction.
 - v. We are a NON disciplined nation and no non disciplined nation ever survives it's lack of discipline.
9. The only thing which is holding this nation together is the one system of discipline which is not and has not been tampered with by the federal government not that they won't eventually and that is the local church with its Pastor Teacher communicating Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis.
 - i. There are patches of discipline in some areas such as the military and some what in Law Enforcement and in big business although the EVIL of labor unions have all but totally destroyed that.
 - ii. There are still a few people alive who grew up under discipline and won wars under discipline but there are very few of these people left.
 - iii. The only thing actually left is the discipline of the local church where people come and regulate themselves and listen to the teaching of Bible Doctrine consistently without any other issue being present.
10. The reversionist will not accept self or group discipline or the authority of anyone but himself
 - i. But he will not regulate himself under the principle of authority and therefore he must be regulated by God who must discipline him beginning with mild discipline and increasing to the point of death.
11. The analogy is that reversionism and evil not only disqualifies the believer from reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace but results in maximum Divine Discipline to the Sin Unto Death.
 - i. The Sin Unto Death is never for carnality but only for reversionism
 - ii. There is Divine Discipline for carnality and for reversionism
 - iii. The Divine Discipline for reversionism is extensive, intensive and goes to the point of the Sin Unto Death.
 - iv. In addition when in reversionism all forms of Divine Discipline for carnality are intensified.
 - v. However, The real problem today in discipline is NOT carnality but is REVERSIONISM which ends in the Sin Unto Death.
 - vi. NO ONE ever dies the Sin Unto Death for carnality.
 - vii. A Believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace can be carnal at any time in his Super Grace Status Quo and he will not die.

- a. David did not die in his raping of Bathsheba and killing Uriah because he was a Super Grace believer in carnality and YOU DO NOT DIE THE SIN UNTO DEATH FOR CARNALITY.
 - viii. You can only die the Sin Unto Death for reversionism which includes much carnality but it is NOT the carnality which is the problem but the reversionism.
12. **This is where an understanding of the Cross helps:**
- i. **On the cross Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was judged for all human sins which come from the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature.**
 - ii. **At the same time he rejected Human Good and Evil which comes from the area of strength of the Old Sin Nature.**
 - iii. *{(FF) Sin had to be eliminated as an issue in order to resolve the Angelic Conflict since the issue is the plan and policy of Satan which is Good and Evil vs the plan and policy of God which is Bible Doctrine and GRACE; therefore Good and Evil had to be allowed to continue to the end of Human History}*
 - iv. **Review the Old Sin Nature and its structure.**
 - v. **Since all sin has been judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross the rebound procedure of naming sin to God allows God to forgive us that carnal transgression.**
 - vi. *Involvement with Good and Evil such as the Influence of Evil on the believer cannot be instantly forgiven and when Good and Evil influence the believer to the EXCLUSION of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then the believer must reverse the situation by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to exclude Good and Evil from his thinking and function.*
 - vii. **In the garden when the issue of Good and Evil was before the man and woman and the angels were all observing them PHYSICAL DEATH was not even an issue.**
 - viii. **It was the Status Quo of their Spiritual Life or Spiritual Death which was the issue based on the direction of function of their volition.**
 - ix. **In addition when the angels were watching the Cross the ISSUE on the Cross with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was NOT HIS PHYSICAL DEATH but his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for our sins.**
 - x. **The fact that Adam and Ishah finally died physically was not an issue or concern of the angels, and it took Adam over 900 years to die.**
 - xi. **The only one impressed with physical death is the mixed up individual and they are so impressed with physical death that they think that it is the issue and that the “wages of sin” is PHYSICAL DEATH and this destroys the Cross and buries the work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.**
 - xii. **Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did not die physically for our sins but died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for our sins.**
 - xiii. **After the original sin of both Adam and Ishah they did not die physically they were very active in producing Human Good under the influence of Evil of the policy of Satan who was then ruler of the world.**
 - xiv. **Under the influence of evil they immediately functioned in Human Good by making and putting on CLOTHING.**
13. This means that sin and carnality do not disqualify the believer from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or spiritual growth because of the grace provision of rebound and if you regulate your own life you will rebound consistently.
14. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and resultant reversionism means disqualification
15. This passage relates the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and resultant Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to the biblical concepts of self discipline plus group & academic discipline in life in time.

II. So far there are 4 analogies to Discipline:

- A. #1 to the student teaching GRACE Discipline – v1
- B. #2 to banking teaching ACADEMIC Discipline – v2
- C. #3 to the military teaching SELF Discipline – v3-4
- D. #4 to the athletic games teaching BLESSING and REWARD from Discipline – v5
- E. #5 to farming teaching the DYNAMICS of SELF Discipline – v6

III. Analogy to Farming and the Dynamics of Self discipline

- A. The Farmer has to have a lot of self discipline and the hard working one even more.
 - 1. He arises before daylight eats a great breakfast and does chores which must be done before he can get to the WORK which must be done.
 - 2. He works till sundown and then more chores then dinner and sleep and must have an extremely well regulated life.
- B. This analogy picks up where the athletic analogy left off.
 - 1. The farmer must be self regulating and have great self discipline.
 - 2. The Athlete must be self regulating and have great self discipline.
- C. The farmer must be first to receive his share of the benefits of farming.
 - 1. This is analogous to the function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - 2. This involves not only self discipline but self discipline when totally exhausted.
 - 3. The harvest is the analogy to blessing in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- D. It is important to remember that all Romans whether Plebes or Aristocrats had to raise their own food and had a minimum of 3 acres of land to do so on.
 - 1. Their food consisted of Porridge, Bread, Pork, Vegetables, Milk, Water.
 - 2. By self discipline and hard work the roman raised his own food.
 - 3. He therefore lived by his own consistent self discipline and self regulation.
 - 4. This is the same way the believer lives and advances in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond is through self regulation and self discipline.
- E. The secret to consistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the great self discipline again mentioned in v6.
 - 1. This brings out the dynamics of self discipline and the secret lies within your own ability to discipline your own life under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
 - 2. You may be motivated but if exhausted you may not have proper motivation since exhaustion destroys motivation.
 - 3. Therefore in order to keep going when not motivated there must be an intensive self discipline to do bible study or attend bible class.
 - 4. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit does make it possible for you to get a booster or GRACE supercharger to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - 5. All Bible Doctrine is the spiritual food for the believer just as the production of the Roman's small acreage was his means of sustaining his own life.
 - 6. Story of Cincinatus
 - 7. Monteus Curio - A man who can be content with a simple supper has not need of gold I count it a glory NOT to possess wealth but to conquer and rule those who do.
- F. Those members of the Royal Family of God who operate under GRACE must be the first to share the benefits of Grace.
 - 1. No one can operate under Grace apart from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and NO ONE can function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception daily apart from strict self discipline.
 - 2. Consistent daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is HARD WORK and requires great self discipline.
 - 3. The benefits of this harvest are absolutely fantastic and cannot be reproduced by anyone or anything including the Ruler of this World Satan.

4. The harvest of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is well worth the hard work of concentrating on the study of Bible Doctrine.

2Tim 2:6

v6: **The hardworking farmer, who works to the point of exhaustion exhibiting great self-discipline, must be the first in time to receive his share of the profits, benefits/crops/productions/rewards, the blessings of Super Grace.**

Lesson #31 Series # 469 2Tim 2:6

- I. The Problem of News in interpretation of the facts.
 - A. This causes us to be propagandized constantly and get very little fact about the things going on in our nation and the world.
 1. As a member of the Royal Family of God we are in the best position to interpret historical trends more so than any news commentator.
 2. There is more propaganda today than ever before in our history.
 - B. Houston Tribune (if it still exists) outside the news media in South Africa or Rhodesia is a great source of News in 1976's and even Ronald Reagan had a column.
 - C. ***Quote from Alegerti Dante 1300 AD "The hottest places in hell are reserved for those in a period of moral crisis maintain their neutrality".***
 - D. From the period of 1976 on to today there has been and is very little truth in the general news media.
- II. Outline of 2Tim 2:
 - A. Analogies to Discipline
 1. #1 to the student teaching GRACE Discipline – v1
 2. #2 to banking teaching ACADEMIC Discipline – v2
 3. #3 to the military teaching SELF Discipline – v3-4
 4. #4 to the athletic games teaching BLESSING and REWARD from Discipline – v5
 5. #5 to farming teaching the DYNAMICS of SELF Discipline – v6
- III. Principles:
 - A. In the time of writing of this passage, Agriculture activity was the basis for the economy of the ancient world.
 - B. In the rise of SPQR the dynamics of the roman people was related to their agricultural discipline.
 1. From agriculture they received sustenance but the basis for the rise of the Roman people.
 2. The Roman People are an amalgamation of at least 4 Races, Latins, Sabines, Etruscans, Greeks, ETC.
 - i. There is no racial issue in Rome but what takes a group of people living in the same geographic region and converts them into a great nation and keeps them that way.
 - ii. Rome in fact holds the record for longevity of national entity and greatness over a period of 1000 years.
 3. This was the result of the discipline learned from their agricultural economy..
 - C. Every Roman had 3 acres of land which was a source of his food and inspiration for his self discipline.
 1. He tilled his own soil and grew his own food and sustained himself by his decisions to go out and work his 3 acres.
 - D. Every Roman patrician or plebeian, aristocrat or peasant raised his own food by great self discipline and hard work.
 - E. All Romans regardless of class were farmers and had very simple food.
 - F. By self discipline and hard work the Roman raised food for himself and thereby he lived by his own consistent self discipline just as the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ progresses in the Spiritual Life.
 - G. The secret to consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine is the continued function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Filling of God the Holy Spirit and for this to occur there must be great self discipline.
 1. God provides for us a grace umbrella under which we must make continuous and periodic decisions which involve self discipline.

- H. The bible covers many subjects which do not have an equal interest to the believer so that consistent study of Bible Doctrine demands self discipline.
- I. The academic self discipline of concentration through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit makes it possible for the believer to give equal attention to all Bible Doctrine subjects whether they are interesting to him or not.
- J. All Bible Doctrine is the believers spiritual food just as the production of the acreage of each Roman was the source of sustaining his life.
 - 1. What the republic did for the development of the Roman physically was to have him Grow and Prepare his own food from his 3 acres and by the use of self discipline his soul was prepared for the greatness of the nation and later on Athletics did the same thing.
- K. Those members of the Royal Family of God who operate under the grace Plan of God must be the first to share the benefits of Grace.
 - 1. No one can operate under Grace apart from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception being the daily labor to the point of Exhaustion.
 - 2. For the consistent daily intake of Bible Doctrine there is the principle of academic discipline which starts with personal self discipline which requires one to regulate his own life.
 - 3. Self discipline includes the discipline needed to constantly use the rebound procedure.
 - 4. God provided the means for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God and we simply provide **Nonmeritorious Volition**
 - 5. Grace excludes meritorious volition and only includes nonmeritorious volition.
 - 6. We are given the opportunity under grace self discipline to make extensive decisions daily which are Nonmeritorious and call upon and draw upon the vast resources of GRACE.
 - 7. The benefits or harvest of the hard work of consistent self discipline in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine are the blessings received at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

IV. Doctrine of Super Grace:

- A. Definition & Classification:
 - 1. Grace is all God is free to do for man on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - i. This is where compatibility of the Essence of God makes it possible to give to the undeserving.
 - 2. Grace is the freedom of God to Love the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and express that love in a perfect plan for that believer.
 - 3. In Eternity Past the under divine decree God found a way to save and bless man on the basis of the Cross.
 - 4. Grace is the plan of God on behalf of man therefore begins at the cross.
 - 5. Grace is the plan, policy and function of divine Modus Vivendi and Modus Operandi
 - 6. Grace depends on the Essence of God and character of God therefore on who and what God is by essence, God the Father, God the Son & God the Holy Spirit.
 - 7. Grace is what God can do for man and still be consistent with his essence
- B. 5 categories of Grace:
 - 1. Saving Grace Eph 2:8-9
 - i. Includes all that God must and did to in order to provide eternal salvation and the approach to it by a ONE shot nonmeritorious faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 2. Living or Logistical Grace
 - i. This is all that the trinity does to keep the believer alive and well on the earth in the devils world.
 - ii. He provides for both the advancing and Super Grace believer and the reversionist.
 - iii. Being alive on the earth is a part of the Angelic Conflict.
 - iv. We are alive only for the purpose of making a decision or having a positive attitude toward the Plan of God or the Plan of Satan.

- v. Constant Positive Volition toward the Plan of God WILL eventually put us in Super Grace Status Quo while Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine will put us just a surely into reversionism and resultant Divine Discipline.
 - vi. Divine Discipline for the believer especially the reversionist is confined to TIME and God keeps us in time either to bless or discipline us, to curse us or provide fantastic blessings totally apart from Satan.
 - vii. This means we have the essentials of life and means of making self presentable to attend bible study and of assimilating the content of the teaching of Bible Doctrine with the manners, poise, objectivity and concentration needed to fulfill the objective of LIFE on this earth after salvation.
 - viii. There is also a spiritual provision Bible Doctrine in the scripture, the local church as classroom and Pastor Teacher as teacher.
3. Super Grace
 - i. Designed in Eternity Past by God the Father for every believer.
 4. Dying Grace as the bridge between time and eternity and physical life and Eternal Life.
 - i. This is the way of blessing the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 - ii. The reversionist goes out under the Sin Unto Death.
 5. Surpassing Grace
 - i. The rewards and blessings in eternity for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - ii. Also designed in Eternity Past by God the Father for every believer. **Eph 2:7**
- C. Definition of Super Grace:
1. It is a synonym for Christian Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. It is derived from **James 4:6**
 - a. Arrogance here is reversionism
 - b. Humility here is Super Grace.
 - ii. It is a gift to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God
 2. 3 types of power of the Plan of God describe the situation which brings the believer to Super Grace: **Eph 1;19**
 - a. Operational Power – God the Holy Spirit
 - b. Ruling power – Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - c. Inner power – Doctrine arriving in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 3. It is described as pursuing Grace Eph 1:6, called recognition of glory from the source of his grace.
 - i. Glorification of God comes from every believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the distribution of blessings to this mature believer. **Eph 3:20-21, 1Tim 1:14**
 4. It is the adult phase of the Spiritual Life and the place of maximum blessing from God.
 - i. These are the basis for glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in time.
 5. It is the sphere of life in which the Royal Family of God reaps what God Sows instead of reaping what We so.
 6. It is fulfillment of **Rom 8:28** to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- D. Super Grace is the objective of the believer's life in time **Eph 3:16-19**
1. Being filled with all the fullness from God is receipt of your Super Grace blessings in time.
- E. Characteristics of the Super Grace Life **Ps 23:5-6**
1. **My cup is full to the rim and constantly overflows consequently dogmatically GRACE and doctrine will pursue me all the days of my life.**
 2. The Cup of your life is constantly full and overflows because God is pouring and is glorified by pouring blessing to you in the devils world.

- i. When you have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you have a CUP and God does all the pouring of blessings into your cup in 5 categories.
 - ii. By God pouring and blessing you totally apart from the Cosmic Dynaspheres GOD is glorified.
 - 3. God is waiting to provide Super Grace blessings for every believer **Is 30:18**
 - i. Having accepted the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and therefore being under propitiation therefore GOD IS FAIR in providing these blessings to you as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- F. Importance of Bible Doctrine in attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace **Heb 11:1-3**
- G. Therefore a new perspective comes from the Super Grace life **Phil 3:4-8**
 - 1. Written by Paul one of the greatest men of genius in history he expresses his NOT having confidence in man or his own abilities.
 - 2. There were 4 truly great men of super genius in history, Paul, Moses, Caesar and Napoleon
 - i. These 4 men were so far ahead of others in history that no one even comes close to them and envious little people always try to belittle one of more of them but this is merely the pettiness of arrogance.
 - 3. Paul could have been a human genius but became a great spiritual genius.
- H. We have a command to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace **Heb 12:1-3**
- I. The importance of attaining that objective **Phil 3:12-14**
 - 1. We are to seize and Hold the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace until we depart from this life.
- J. The Issue of the Believer in time:
 - 1. Why does God keep us alive after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and why do we have to remain here?
 - 2. God loves every believer with maximum love regardless of the temporal Status Quo of that believer
 - i. Carnal
 - ii. Spiritual
 - iii. Mature
 - iv. Immature
 - v. Super Grace
 - vi. Reversionist
 - 3. This maximum love is based on propitiation the God directed work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - 4. According to **1John 4:19** it is possible for the believer to love God with a maximum love in time.
 - 5. However no believer loves God until he first knows God
 - 6. No believer can know God until he has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, giving him capacity for Category I love and the principle of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 7. The Super Grace believer has maximum love for God having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Rom 8:28, Eph 3:19, 1John 4:19**
 - 8. God expresses his love to the believer in time under different categories.
 - i. To the Super Grace believer God expresses his love through blessing and reward
 - ii. To the reversionistic believer God expresses his love through intensifying and increasing Divine Discipline to the point of the Sin Unto Death.
- K. The role of happiness in Super Grace and the Key to Super Grace.

1. This is the Sharing the Happiness of God and therefore the life of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is characterized as a life of happiness.
 2. In the Edification Complex of the Soul and 10 Problem Solving Devices Sharing the Happiness of God is at or very near the top of the stack for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- L. The relationship with other categories of Grace:
1. Salvation Grace == All the trinity work to save mankind == Involvement is nonmeritorious volition expressed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the living Word.
 2. Living or Logistical Grace == divine provision to keep the believer alive in time == no volition involved and is a matter of the Plan of God and sovereignty of God who decides how long you will remain in this life.
 3. Super Grace == the tactical victory of the Royal Family of God with maximum growth and blessing including Dying Grace == Nonmeritorious volition as expressed by daily decisions for self discipline involving the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 4. Surpassing Grace (Eph 2:7) == all that God will provide for blessing and reward for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in time == No volition involved as the Angelic Conflict will have been terminated.
- M. God has designed for every believer Super Grace and Surpassing Grace Blessings for Time and Eternity respectively.
1. One is part of resolution of the Angelic Conflict while the other is not related to the Angelic Conflict but to a total eternal relationship with God with maximum recognition of one's attitude toward Bible Doctrine in time.
- N. Categories of Super Grace Believers as represented by Jewish Heroes.
1. Abraham – Paul
- O. Promotion of Super Grace **Ps 84**
- P. Areas of Super Grace Capacity
1. Freedom
 2. Life
 3. Love
 4. Happiness
 5. Suffering
 6. Self Discipline
- Q. Reality of the celebrityship of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
1. This is where Super Grace heroes always manifest themselves.
 2. The Super Grace hero is any believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 3. The Heroes are the ones who recognize the unique celebrityship of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ being under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and maximum Category I Love. **Lam 3:21-25**
- R. Super Grace is the part of the road to glory
- S. Attitude toward Bible Doctrine in time determines all grace blessings and rewards in both time and eternity
- T. The content of Super Grace Blessings in 5 categories:
1. Spiritual Blessings
 - i. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - ii. Sharing the Happiness of God
 - iii. Capacity for all categories of Life including blessing and grace.
 - iv. Ability to face any pressure or suffering in this life.
 2. Temporal Blessings
 - i. Wealth
 - ii. Success
 - iii. Promotion
 - iv. Prosperity

- a. Social
 - b. Sexual
 - c. Professional
 - d. Technical
 - e. Mental as increased mental capacity and appreciation of many subjects in life.
 - f. Cultural
 - g. Establishment including Patriotism, freedom, privacy, protection from Crime, Blessing in Battle
 - h. In Depression or Disaster
 - i. Leadership Dynamics
 - i) Proper use of Power and Authority
3. Association Blessing
- i. Those who are in the periphery of the believer in Super Grace both share in his blessing and receive blessing from God directly as well.
 - ii. This includes a peripheral concept of:
 - a. Family
 - b. Friends
 - c. Loved Ones
 - d. Business associates
 - e. Organizational Associates
 - iii. There is also a SPHERE concept where your blessings overflows to:
 - a. City
 - b. County
 - c. Nation
 - iv. In addition there is Geographical Blessing for those in the area of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace:
 - a. Neighborhood
 - b. City Limits
 - v. This category of blessing by association applies to many things:
 - a. Clubs
 - b. Social Organizations
 - c. local church
 - d. Military
 - e. Civic
 - f. Police or Fire departments
 - g. Administrative Agency
 - h. Teams
 - vi. This includes the principle of the Salt of the Earth whereby the Super Grace believer preserves his relationship and government and nation.
4. Historical Impact Blessings:
- i. This is the principle that the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is the spiritual atlas who carries his generation in history.
 - ii. There is no such thing as perpetuating blessing from one generation to another.
 - a. You cannot make a better world for your children or grandchildren.
 - iii. Every generation must stand or fall on the basis of their Super Grace believers of LACK of them.
 - iv. Everything depends on the election of the remnant according to GRACE and this refers to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - v. This remnant of Super Grace believers are classified as being on the right side of history **2Tim 3**
 - vi. This is the doctrine of Spiritual Heritage **2 Tim 1:5**

- vii. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace are on the right side of history and even the greatest men of genius who are unbelievers in history come to a tragic end.
 - a. This demonstrates that even having the Genius and having the ability to superimpose a multifaceted genius on history so that history is NOT ONLY changed for that generation but in many to come does not prevent the TRAGIC END as with both Caesar and Napoleon.
 - viii. Only the Super Grace believer can avoid the tragic end of life and he has a GLORIOUS End of Life on this earth.
 - ix. To avoid being on the wrong side of Human History the individual must believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - x. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer enters the Plan of God for time and eternity.
 - xi. Now the issue is “What after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God”?
 - a. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer must advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 - b. This is the requirement for self discipline and the ministry of God the Holy Spirit for the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - xii. This maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer in Super Grace causes him to become the basis for historical blessing for his generation.
5. Dying Blessing:
- i. In the family of God of believers the reversionist is on the wrong side of history and therefore dies the Sin Unto Death painfully, horribly.
 - ii. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is on the right side of Human History and therefore he dies gloriously happily and leaves behind great blessings for those who remain and were associated with him in life.
 - iii. Super Grace is the BEST in life and is even better in dying and better than the best for all eternity.
 - iv. Surpassing Grace therefore is described as Better than the Best.
- U. This all comes as a result of the Self discipline of v1-6